

THE
L I F E
AND
H I S T O R Y
OF A
P I L G R I M,

A NARRATIVE founded on FACT.

By GEORGE WOLLASTON, Esq. ✓

———quæque ipse miserrima vidi,
Et quorum pars magna fui.———

VIRGIL.

D U B L I N Printed :
L O N D O N Reprinted : For J. WHISTON
and B. WHITE in Fleet-street, J. PAYNE
in Pater-noster-row, and M. SHEEPY
near the Royal Exchange.
M.DCC.LIII.



P R E F A C E.

TH E Compiler of this History, from the gratitude and respect which the Hero of it has for a nobleman in one of the highest stations in this kingdom, had prepared a dedication of it to him ; whose name would have been not only the greatest ornament, but the most powerful recommendation of the work ; but upon maturer consideration, he finds himself obliged to send it into the world without that advantage : some of his indiscretions and misfortunes appearing in so light a dress, that, whatever

iv P R E F A C E.

entertainment they may afford to others, they would give his lordship none, but what must arise from the exercise of his forgiveness.

The editor's chief view in the publication was, that he might keep his word with several gentlemen of distinction, to whom, in a chearful hour, he has related most of the passages ; and, at their request, promised at some time or other to make them public.

He has lived in such entire intimacy with the Pilgrim, that he is confident there is not a single event of his life which he is not acquainted with. As to
the

P R E F A C E. v

the scenes here represented, however marvellous some of them appear, they are taken from the Pilgrim's own mouth ; with the addition only of such embellishments in some of the incidental circumstances, as may serve to make the narrative less tedious.

The editor is ready to acknowledge, that he has designedly suppressed several uncommon adventures, which might not, perhaps, have been unacceptable to some of his readers ; but he persuades himself, that he shall have on his side those whom he is most ambitious to please, and whose pardon he has too much reason to intreat, for some particulars that still remain, which
he

vi P R E F A C E.

he is sensible are far from doing honour to the character of his hero; whom the candid reader will however, it is hoped, consider, not only as relating, but confessing his errors and misconduct; of which he has long since had a proper sense: and it is his earnest wish, that the following sheets, besides the little amusement they may happen to convey, may, in some degree, answer a farther and more useful purpose, by lighting up a beacon, to shew the thoughtless and unexperienced some of the dangers they are exposed to: and if he may be allowed to mention any thing sacred in a work of this nature, he desires it may be taken as a public acknowledgment of the
goodness

P R E F A C E. vii

goodness of Providence, which has so visibly appeared, all along, in his behalf ; and, at length, raised him up, in a most particular manner, an inestimable friend, by whose kindness, in the latter part of his life, he most thankfully acknowledges, that he is happily stationed far beyond his merit or expectations.

T H E

P R E F A C E

Goodness or Providence, which
has so visibly appeared all along
in his conduct, and at length
called him up, in a most generous
manner, an insupportable friend,
of whose kindness, in the latter
part of his life, he most heartily
acknowledges, that he is happily
satisfied for beyond his merit or
expectations.

T H E

e
a
d
H
ch
fe
fi
of
ed
ma
ap
fun
bel

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM.
BOOK I.

THE person, who is to be the subject of the following memoirs, was born in England; where his father had a considerable estate, was a member of parliament many years, and had several very honourable employments under a late lord chancellor of that kingdom.

In the year 1703 he was sent to school in Hertfordshire, under the tuition of a very learned clergyman; one particularly famous in that profession, and accordingly had about an hundred and fifty scholars, a great many of whom were the sons of some of the principal gentlemen in England.

The name of the person with whom he boarded, was Zacharias Blows, a well-meaning, honest man, but a very strict puritan: people were apt to say, that the strength of his zeal had furnished him with some oddities of dress and behaviour in his family, which, though they are
B taken

taken notice of in the following history, it has been done without any view of depreciating his memory. He was by trade a timber-merchant, and a heel-maker ; but by the great solemnity of his behaviour had arrived to the office of clerk of the meeting-house : he was very tall and thin, and of a most dejected, pensive aspect : his dress was perfectly primitive ; plaits and stiffening, and all such modern inventions, being contemned by him as things that savoured of the guise of this world, and did not become a spiritual man.

On Sundays he constantly wore a short neck-cloth, very nearly allied to its principal, the parson's band ; his hair was very long and lank, over which, in winter, he wore a most copious black silk cap, for the protection of the crown of his head, which was very bald, and in summer covered it with an old pair of black gloves : he had such strength of memory, and valued himself so much upon it, that, to the great delay of Sunday's dinner, he would sometimes repeat, as an interlude, the greatest part of the sermon which he had heard in the morning.

He was as harmonious a psalmodist as probably was ever heard, and, to his immortal honour, initiated our hero so perfectly into that sort of music, that he could never refrain joining in concert with every congregation he went into afterwards ; and it is allowed among the adepts, that if it had been his good fortune to have been bred up in a cathedral way, he would have made no inconsiderable figure in that worship.

He had a most excellent, though an uncommon, way of encouraging his boarders to remember
what

what was preached to them, as well by rewarding those who repeated most of the sermon, with the largest mess, as by detaining the proportion of the delinquents, without any scrupulous regard, whether the fault proceeded from want of attention, or want of memory ; by one or other of which unhappy causes it would have been our hero's fate to have gone to bed supperless oftner than he did, if he had not been sometimes dexterous enough to open the repository, in which the milk-pottage was always secured.

The landlord, of whom so minute and just a description has been given, would not have taken, perhaps, so much room here, had it not been partly on his wife's account, who was the very reverse of poor Zachary ; neither pensive nor dejected, but most turbulently noisy ; of a very diminutive size, sour aspect and distorted body, and our hero's avowed enemy, on account of some little pranks he had played her.

She had so shrill a voice when she was out of humour (which, in justice to her character, generally was the case) and was so gifted with the spirit of scolding, that I have often heard him say, that he never had been present at a female encounter, after her death, but she immediately came fresh into his memory ; and he has heartily wished for her resurrection, on no other account, indeed, than that she might give her assistance to the weakest in the combat, who with her help could not fail of success.

She had reduced his landlord to all the patience and resignation she could demand, and, to his great misfortune, was sole governess of the castle ; and, as she kept the keys of the cupboard,

had frequently curtailed our hero's diet, from whence, it is thought, he commenced a pupil in the science of marauding; however, he took all the pains he could to retaliate her usage, and many times, to her great mortification, brought his inclinations to bear: at length, having been many times whipped on her accusations, which were always an undeniable proof against him, he contrived a plot, the success of which was to secure him from any farther effects of her influence with his master.

The necessary-house was at the lower end of the garden, and built over a small river: he knew the periodical time at which she used to take a walk to it, especially on Sunday mornings before she went to meeting; and accordingly he unnailed two boards of the floor, and placed them over the river again in a very geometrical manner, on which, as soon as she set her foot, the planks gave way, and his poor, good landlady, not without his wishes and expectations, tumbled at once into the river, the stream of which carried her into a tan-yard contiguous to it: the tanner's dog, who though probably he neither liked her countenance, nor the condition she was in, dragged her out in his mouth, and tore her cloaths in pieces; but being a dog of great humanity, spared her life. Our hero, having placed himself at a proper distance to observe the event, whatever pleasure he might receive at seeing her plump into the river, was struck with the rashness of his attempt, when he saw her sailing down the stream; he therefore fled in a very little time after she landed, and hiding himself that night in a stable of an inn, he rode early the next morning behind

behind the Cambridge stage-coach to Saffron-Walden ; where, fearing he should be known by the coachman, as soon as he got down he ran up a lane to a gardener's house, where he continued some time upon sufferance, and returned the obligation of a belly-full, by frightening birds with a clapper from his landlord's fruit.

He told the gardener, upon his inquiring who he was, and upon what occasion he came thither, that he left London the same day the stage-coach did, on account of the cruel usage he had received from his step-mother ; and related so pitiful a story, that he and his wife seemed greatly concerned for him, and desired him not to attend the garden, in the way he had done, any longer. However, being privileged to go into it whenever he pleased, he eat so much fruit that he fell into a violent fever ; and about a fortnight after his recovery, was discovered by one Mason, who had been coachman to his father, and at that time lived with Sir Robert Cotton in that station ; by whose means, after a thousand ineffectual advertisements and promises of reward, he was sent back again to school, and delivered over to his honest landlord and his wife, upon the last of whom, though she escaped with her life, he doubtless entailed the rheumatism, the pains of which, possibly as a judgment, he has long since had such experience of, that he cannot help compassionating every mortal that labours under them, though dame Blows's gave him, at that time, no great concern. As soon as he got home, he was close confined, whipped, and put on less than half allowance till Whitsuntide, to the inexpressible gratification of his landlady ; after which

he was sent home to his father, who repeated his chastisement, and locked him up during the holidays, and afterwards had him conveyed back to school, as little incumbered with money, as when he left it.

He took his leave, with repeated promises of amendment, which doubtless at that time were sincere, though afterwards not too exactly performed, as will appear by the following most melancholy disaster.

The week after he had returned to school, there was a fair at Bishop-Stortford, where the want of money, and the appearance of a great many things, highly agreeable to school-boys, were a great mortification to him.

There was a woman who had a stall of confectionary wares, and among other temptations, several large papers of almonds and raisins neatly made up for sale: he was greatly devoted to one of those papers, but being disabled from being a fair purchaser, he prevailed on the woman to give him credit for one of them, till evening, which, with much persuasion on his part, and double the price on her's, she accordingly agreed to; and I have heard him say, that there was not any thing without wings, that ever made such expedition as he did with his cargo to his lodgings, being under terrible apprehensions that he should never be able to pay for them, his stock being as low as ever the south-sea was; and though he took a full feast of them, yet he did not think they had the natural sweetness, which many times he had found in things of the same kind before; and as soon as he had finished them, he began to consider, that he was guilty of a shameful trick, by promising

what

what he had no prospect of performing ; for by the urgent craving of his appetite, and the deplorable emptiness of his pocket, his weekly allowance being stopped for his late excursion, he was reduced to the condition of an absolute mendicant, and accordingly, in some measure, satisfied himself, with what he had afterwards full evidence was the principle of that order, that " necessity has no law : " however, for fear his creditor should pursue him for the debt too soon, he most judiciously crept into the hollow trunk of a large tree, which lay at the bottom of the garden.

He made his entry into it pretty easily, and there lay tolerably quiet all night ; but endeavouring very early in the morning to make his retreat, to his utter shame and confusion, he could by no means get clear of his intrenchment, but half-dead with fear, lay roaring and bellowing, till his landlord's apprentice, having some occasion to go to the timber-yard, which was at some small distance from the house, espied one of his feet, which with great struggling had just made its appearance out of the tree.

The boy was so terrified, that, without attempting to give him any assistance, he ran directly to inform his master and mistress, that he had found our hero stone-dead in the tree. This account was instantly spread among the neighbours, who flocked to the inquest that was to be held over him ; and though his personal appearance could not be made to the jury, so as the inquest might have been held "*super visum corporis*," yet he could distinctly hear, through the chinks in the tree, the various animadversions

of the companies, particularly those of his landlady, whose voice was by many degrees louder than any of the rest, and who very learnedly explained how visibly the judgment of heaven had fallen on him for his traitorous plot against her life, and with great strength of memory repeated the whole history of her ducking, concluding, that in her conscience she believed, she had never been perfectly sweet since.

There was another old woman present, whose character was not quite clear from that of a witch; doubtless she was a fortune-teller of great renown; for she affirmed to the spectators, that she had long since foretold his death, in the manner that it had now happened; and that she had discovered to several of the neighbours the very moment he would expire, which was precisely at four o'clock that morning.

At last one of the company laid hold of his feet, and with much pains and labour pulled him out of the tree; when he made a most drole figure, with his face scratched, his nose beat almost flat, and every other part of him as black as soot, occasioned by the inside of the tree, most of which was rotten.

In this unfortunate condition he was laughed at by every one, except his landlady, who seemed to be exceedingly sorrowful, that heaven had not revenged her quarrel more effectually upon him: and what compleated his shame, was, that the woman to whom he was indebted for the almonds and raisins, having found out where her debtor lodged, was unfortunately one of the spectators.

She

She was a mere Amazon, and if possible, had a more terrible aspect than his landlady, and taking him by the collar, swore most inhumanly, that she would neither stay for judge or jury, but make an end of his life in reality, if he did not immediately pay her sixteen pence, as a composition for the felony, which, with great submission to her judgment, he took to be a debt only.

His landlord, whose pity doubtless induced him to think he ought to have some few moments allowed for repentance, promised her prompt payment, which was accordingly performed; and as she received an ample price for her goods, the same proportion of justice was done to him for his ingenuity by a whipping, worth, between two brothers, more than the woman's whole cargo.

Here possibly it might have been necessary to have made some apology for the freedom he took with her goods and chattels, but as his punishment in his inclosure was so extraordinary, his whipping so considerable, and the owner of the goods overpaid, he must trust to the humanity of his readers for absolution, and particularly as he has so candidly confessed the whole affair.

It is now time to proceed to more material parts of the history, by letting the readers know, that after seven years of correction, rather than improvement, he was taken from school in the year 1710, and for twelve months afterwards stayed at home, his father not having determined to what employment or trade to put him, his capacity both natural and acquired justifying his want of choice. Whilst his father was watching the particular bent of his genius, he became very expert in all country exercises, being a constant at-

tendant at football, fairs and wakes, when that little villain Love began to give him a glimmering notion of the country girls; which his father being advised of, and perhaps not without some suspicion at home, he thought it necessary to dispose of him forthwith; and accordingly bound him, by indenture, clerk to a very eminent attorney and conveyancer; one who, I have been informed, had as many oddities in his temper, and made, upon some occasions, as unaccountable a figure as any one of his profession.

He was an old bachelor, and, to his everlasting scandal, a woman-hater, to such a degree, that if any of his female clients came only to consult with him at his chambers, which were in Lincoln's-Inn Square, there was no peace in Israel for his clerks that day; though I am informed, that in his absence there was as free an intercourse with the whole sex, as perhaps was ever known in any office, except one lately held in School-house-Lane.

He was morose and rude to all mankind, and loved money more than he did his maker and all his works. He was above six feet high, a sloven of the first magnitude, and when he condescended to make a bow, which in reality he seldom did, you would imagine he would fall on his nose, which was so truly Roman, that it was quite crooked in the center, and probably the receptacle of a quarter of a pound of Burgamot every day, by his daubing the breast of his coat with which, he got the name of the Nottingham Painter; that town being the birth-place of so extraordinary a prodigy.

Our hero's master had several clerks, one of whom, a Welchman of the renowned name and family of Morgan, had lived with him a great many years: he was not only perfect in all the mysteries of an hackney clerk, but had taken his degrees in the debaucheries of London, that fountain of universal education: he knew the inexpressible pleasure of expedition fees, was compleatly qualified to draw a sliding affidavit, and would, on proper motives, swear to the truth of one, without unnecessary hesitation. He had an admirable knack at keeping a good correspondence both with the plaintiff and defendant; could draw a bill of costs with such exquisite skill, that if one half was to be abated, he was sure to gain sufficiently by the remainder; and being truly zealous for his client, had, as a chamber-solicitor, more of his bills dismissed for prolixity and scandal, than any one of that part of the profession.

Under the conduct of this hopeful gentleman, our hero commenced his second course of education; and by the cultivation of so great a master, he might soon have made a wonderful proficiency, though his real master gave himself no manner of trouble in regard to his being instructed, but was so perverse a mule, that, notwithstanding he loved money more than any one living, he did not care how little his clerks got, which made our hero more industrious to acquire it by any perquisites whatsoever: seven shillings a week, the whole amount of his father's allowance, being but a melancholy pittance for such a count as he soon began to be, by the tuition of his worthy associate.

In short, whoever wanted his master, let the occasion be what it would, must first speak properly to his clerks; the sum total arising from such pecuniary admissions, was most circumspectly divided; and the reader may, without much difficulty, guess in what manner it was expended by his friend Morgan and himself.

In about two years time he began to be greatly in debt, and quite out of credit; however, as he was a punctual contributor to the officers of mace, he was sure of a return "not to be found" as to his body, and "no goods or chattels" as to his possessions; in the last of which, the integrity of the bailiff was quite unquestionable: at length, on account of his circumstances, he was glad of any opportunity of getting out of town, as a recess from the many claimants he had both to his person and effects, and was more than ordinarily pleased at attending his master on the circuits, where, he apprehended, he made an exalted figure; being usually mounted on an horse of the Flanders kind, extremely remarkable for the length of his mane and tail, equally useful either for draught or riding, with a pair of long pistols and a cloak-bag in the front of his saddle, and a portmanteau in the rear stuffed with briefs, quotations of cases, precedents of all sorts, and an whole library of reports, together with the copies of the pannels of several juries, to be judiciously made use of; so that in the center of his clock-bag and portmanteau he sat quite erect, unless that now and then he made a curvet, by too great or too expeditious a potation at the inns where he baited; a superintendency and equipment, which though the clerks in England make no small appearance in, would

would be esteemed an eternal disgrace in Ireland; and perhaps it would have been some satisfaction to him, if he had been a little more on the punctilio, for want of which the following disaster happened to him.

His master sent him into Essex to serve a subpoena; and in order to do all possible honour to his commission, he equipped himself with a pair of ruffles, at that time no small mark of distinction, an old tarnished silk waistcoat, a silverlaced hat most distinguishably the worse for wearing, and a pair of half-jack boots mightily out of repair; his coat and breeches were tolerably good, but made of doily stuff, by no means proof against a shower of rain; which he had reason to lament, because he had not interest enough to procure a great coat: being acquainted with an officer of the train-bands, who kept a public house, where our hero's name was legible in chalk to all the world, he furnished him with a sword; the chape of which dropped off in a mile or two's riding; and to add to the smartness of the rest of his equipage, he tied a large black silk bag stuffed with hay to his hair which was very thin and long.

He set out on this expedition on an hired horse of very remarkable qualities, stumbling every perch, and stopping at every sign-post, in which last disposition he most readily indulged him, there being hardly an inn upon the road that he did not call at, rather, it is said, upon his own account, than that of his horse, he not having many other considerations for him more than his bringing him safe home again: He accordingly drank and rode most part of the night, and arriving at Chelmsford,

Chelmsford, he dismounted with great prowess, and (as he thought) in a very significant tone called the ostler, who happened to be employed elsewhere.

His horse being somewhat hungry, and smelling the hay that was in the bag, drew his rider, hay, bag and all into the kennel, and at once reduced him to such a figure, as no poor devil, till that unfortunate hour, was ever in.

As soon as he got up, and had time to contemplate his filthy condition, and find out the ostler, he harangued him with all the curses and opprobrious names he could recollect, on account of his being out of the way, which, after some compliments of condolence, the ostler redoubled on him, swearing bloodily he believed that he was an highwayman instead of a gentleman, and that he had a great mind to secure him as such.

The villain of a landlord, as he imagined him to be by the extraordinary freedom he used him with, came hopping to the door on a pair of crutches, with a monstrous large fur cap on, and a pipe near half a yard long stuck in his mouth, and instead of condoling with him, bawled out, "I think you have catched him, Robin, in the very fact, to be sure, you had better give him the other fousing, I will be bound a sturdy dog of the right spaniel kind, and has been used to these waterings."

The drawer, or some other of his inhuman attendants, was all the time peeping out of a window, crying out, "rub him down, Robin, rub him down well, the gentleman has rode hard, and must be an excellent guest; I warrant you he will take great care of himself, who has been so
great

great a lover of his beast, as to bring his provision with him." All which civilities he returned in the best manner he could, leaving the house with such good wishes as might be expected from a guest who had been so kindly received, assuring the host of his best endeavours to have him and his house presented at the next general assizes.

He then mounted his horse, who during the cabal was feeding very composedly on the remainder of the hay he had drawn from the bag, which his rider had left behind him in the kennel; and in that ignominious condition, rode directly to the house where he was to serve the subpoena, which he did personally on the gentleman to whom it was directed, but very prudently avoided dismounting, for fear his horse should take a fancy to a bite of his hair, which was much of the same colour with that of the hay.

The gentleman, as a supplement to the entertainment he got at the inn, very waggishly told him, that he really would ask him to alight, and take some refreshment of the same sort he had met with where he came from, but that he had no one to wait on him in the manner he could wish, and prayed most fervently, that God Almighty would bless all such as had bestowed their visible benefactions on him.

In this disastrous condition he rode back again, but took care not to make Chelmsford a baiting place, either for himself or his horse; and alighting at a little alehouse about a mile beyond it, in order to palliate the forlorn figure he made, he told the people, he had got a fall, which his horse's knees gave great credit to; and taking up his quarters there for that night, he made the best of his

his way in the morning to London, under a most solemn vow, never to serve a subpoena again; and indeed he has often told me, that he retained the ungentle use he received at that time so fresh in his memory, that of all the scraps of parchment made use of in the law, he thought that the most detestable.

His master had a great many good clients, one of whom was a baronet, a gentleman of a very large estate; but being what is commonly called a goodnatured man, and of a very facetious temper, two qualifications, which when they center indiscriminately in the same person, are often attended with bad consequences, he had managed his affairs so badly, that he was often obliged to have recourse to the attorney for money; a man exceedingly fond of being a creditor to a good estate, in hopes, as it often happens, on that account, to be allied to it: among the rest of his expensive retinue, he had a very pretty girl, with whom he had an amour; she was of mean extraction, but on account of her beauty, and uncommon sprightliness, got to be proprietress of all the fruit that was sold at Lincoln's-Inn playhouse, and is celebrated in the lucubrations of Isaac Bickerstaffe, Esq; by the name of Betty Pippin.

From this employment the baronet removed her to very fine lodgings in Bloomsbury-Square, where she lived in the most expensive manner and dress; but what was pretty odd, as his passion decreased his generosity was enlarged; for after about a year's intercourse, he made a settlement on her of two hundred pounds a year, which was to be paid her quarterly by the attorney who

who by this time had sapped his estate so deeply, that he received and paid every penny on account of it.

Mrs. Betty's allowance was punctually sent to her by our hero, with proper receipts drawn by his master, and as she loved a bottle of good claret, as well as her receiver, he on that account had sometimes an opportunity of drinking the baronet's health with her; which together with a guinea which she allowed him for receiver's fees, gave him hopes of being some time or other a supplemental favourite, especially as he found by the baronet's generosity to him upon some other occasions, that she had given him a very good character.

The poor baronet, not long after he had made the settlement on her, died suddenly; with which melancholy news he acquainted Mrs. Betty within a few hours after his death, who, to shew the great regard she had for his memory, took possession of every thing belonging to him, together with the furniture of the lodgings; and without staying for letters of administration, or any other dry forms of law, removed that very night all his and her own effects to another lodging, the mistress of which was as excellent a guardian as any or all the chancellors in Europe could have appointed: in this retirement she lay concealed from all her former acquaintance, unless our hero was now and then allowed admission to her, under absolute restrictions of not telling her name, or his of whom she was lately the expensive, though perhaps not the only, property.

As soon as the first payment of her annuity became due, she applied in person to his master for it,

it, at his chambers, where he received her more like a monster than an attorney, being the only one of that profession hardly ever known to be guilty of an offence of that nature, to so pretty a delinquent; in short, he unmanned himself so much, as to treat her with the lowest invectives her unhappy condition had exposed her to, and, at length told her, that she was not to expect any more money from him on account of the settlement, in which he alledged there were such flaws as would enable him to set it aside.

No expostulation or intreaties could shake the attorney's resolution, or melt him into humanity: far different was our hero's sentiments, who had a sincere compassion for her distress, abstracted from his receiver's fees, which, upon the death of the baronet, he was in some hopes would have been enlarged; but now, alas! they were in danger of being lost for ever: upon the attorney's peremptory refusal, who was the baronet's only acting executor, Betty commenced a suit against him in chancery, in which our hero and his friend Morgan were her invisible agents.

This suit was, in a very little time, compounded at the request of some of the baronet's relations, in regard to themselves and his memory, which must in some degree have suffered by any further proceedings in it: and, by the composition, Mrs. Betty was to be paid 500 pounds in a month's time; at the expiration of which, the attorney sent the money to her by our hero, who from that time increased very much in her confidence, and by some little smiles of fortune, had an opportunity of dressing out in a manner very surprizing both to his father and master: the first, however,

however, was not only easily satisfied with his pretending that he was enabled to make that appearance by practising as a solicitor unknown to his master, but he applauded his industry and address: but the ingenuousness of his temper not allowing him to carry on the deceit for any considerable time, he soon threw off the mask, and renounced his employment, together with his indentures, and continued to live very magnificently, till by the death of his friend, his finances were quite exhausted.

He now found it necessary to manage with a little more prudence, what remained being quite insufficient to support him any time in his former way of life, which of consequence must have ended very badly, had he not been relieved by his father, who on his late majesty's accession to the crown, was reinstated in the employments he had formerly held under the lord chancellor before-mentioned; and he then standing tolerably well with him, was accordingly appointed to officiate under him.

Upon the demise of the queen, all the commissions of the peace were to be renewed, which was one of the offices that belonged to his father, who, in order to authorise him in the genteelest manner to tender the oaths to such of the justices of the peace as should be restored or added to the commissions of the peace for Middlesex and Westminster, had procured his name to be inserted in them, as well as in a general dedimus; but at the same time informed him, that he was not to act as a justice of the peace "de facto," but to make use of the power vested in him only to swear others.

However,

However, he could not reconcile it to his conscience, that one of his capacity should be a nominal justice of the peace, and, at the same time, have his hands tied up from doing executive justice to his majesty's liege subjects; and so, like a true patriot, he thought it more adviseable to disobey his father, than neglect his country; and therefore, as often as it lay conveniently in his way, he acted in concert with some of the rest of his worshipful brethren; and, to confess the truth, he imagined he neither looked, nor acted, inferior to any one in the commission; and that his appearance might be uniform, he purchased a most significant full-bottom'd wig, Dalton's Office of a Justice of the Peace, a camblet coat with large gold buttons, a long scarlet cloak, a large cane, and a small prayer-book, which last he made use of only in the execution of his office.

As to his internal furniture, he took it to be much on the level with the rest of his brethren; and though he did not, in the infancy of his commission, fill up as many warrants as some of their worships did, he assuredly filled out as many bumpers, and, in the execution of his office, was seldom without a contemplative pipe in his mouth; nay it has been confidently reported, that, in a very little time, he had as many under legal contributions as his worship the chairman.

His clerk was an invalid exciseman, and as keen in that office, as he had been in his former one; he knew the use of a *sliding* examination, as well as he had done that of a rule, under the same appellation; could judge of the extent, length, depth, and circumference of a conscience, without

out any application to figures; and was so prodigious a master of sciences, that he understood palmestry better than the king of the gypsies.

I am afraid it has been alledged, that our hero acted with some partiality in his office; though I do not remember to have heard he did so, unless when influenced by compassion for the distressed of the fair-sex; a case in which Justice herself has been sometimes suspected to peep through her hoodwink; for which single transgression he payed very heartily, as will appear by the following story.

He attended at an adjournment of a sessions at Westminster, with Col. Johnston, Mr. Ellis, and Mr. Hucks, and, as usual at such times, the constables had been very industrious the night before in taking up disorderly and idle persons, at least such as could not clear up their characters to their satisfaction. Among a great croud of gamesters, night-walkers, and strolers, which these purveyors had brought into court, there was a young woman very well dressed; she appeared so perfectly modest, and in such remarkable confusion, that it was with great difficulty her handkerchief was forced from her face; however, our hero took notice, that she would now and then voluntarily expose so much of it, as shewed she was the owner of a very pretty one: she cried bitterly, and frequently cast her eyes on him who was then the junior of the bench: at last, he observed, that she beckoned one of the constables to her, and whispered to him for some time; and indeed she made choice of a most extraordinary one, the most knowing rogue in the whole pack, one exactly fit for her purpose, who bowed and cringed

cringed most obsequiously at every sentence he spoke ; and as he kept his eyes fixed on our hero, he supposed himself to be the person on whom their conversation turned : at length, he called the fellow to him, and asked him, what discourse he had with that young woman ; he begged he might be excused from relating it, and seemed, for a long time, very unwilling to make the least discovery.

This raised his curiosity greatly, and threatening to commit the fellow if he did not immediately let him know their conversation, he shrugged up his shoulders, and with a quaint look, peculiar to such vagabonds, he told him, that “ An please your worship, he was very sorry she had been taken up, for that the poor, innocent, good creature, was a near relation of his worship’s, and that he was afraid she would drop down dead in the dock.”

The prisoner, seeing our hero in deep conversation with the constable, imagined it must be about her, and put on such a prevailing look for pity, that he ordered she should be taken away, and sent into the room behind the court, directing the constable to bring her a cup of Rhenish and sugar from the Horn-tavern ; an office he executed with the utmost expedition.

Our hero was greatly nettled at the information the constable had given him, and thought it the highest indignity that could be offered to him, that his relation, the relation of a justice of the Quorum, should make her appearance in such sort of company ; upon which he sent for the constable, who had the assurance to apprehend her, and ordered him, at his peril, not to leave
the

the court, till his brethren and he should hear what the young woman had to say in regard to her confinement, in which he told him, with great warmth, he believed he had acted like a very great rogue.

The villain who informed him of her being his relation, and he that took her prisoner, were exactly of the same stamp, and, as it will appear hereafter, were both in the secret; the latter of which swore bloodily he had done his duty, and that he never knew a whore or a thief but had some fine relation or other to help them out at a dead lift; and that if he had money enough, he could at any time procure a justice of the peace to be his uncle.

The business of trying, condemning, bailing, and discharging, went on, for some time, as usual, our hero's reputed relation, as he imagined, being ready at a call; when greatly to his surprise, the woman who kept the court-house, came in a violent hurry to the bench, and making half a dozen courtesies remarkably low, intimated that she had something to say of great consequence to his worship, and whispered to him, "That she was very sorry that she should be the author of ill news to his worship, but that the gentlewoman his worship had ordered the wine for, was gone off with the silver cup; which, she was sorry to let his worship know, was worth fifteen or sixteen pounds at least, but was sure it was necessity, downright necessity, that had made her do so, and that she had been informed the young lady was his worship's cousin-german, and God Almighty bless and forgive the poor young thing, she was indeed

indeed as like his worship as ever she could stare."

Upon this he left the bench very abruptly, and finding the court-keeper's history to be orthodox so far as it related to the cup, he sent for the master of the tavern to the room from whence his pretended cousin had made her escape, letting him know, that out of his great humanity to an unfortunate creature, whom he observed to be in the utmost confusion in the dock, and one that had been represented to him to be the daughter of a person of some distinction, he had ordered her to be sent into that room, and as she appeared to be very ill, he had given directions that some wine should be sent for from him, and that he heard that she had made off with the silver cup in which it was brought.

In answer to which, his facetious landlord told him, with a very significant grin, "That really he had heard so too, but that as she was his worship's relation, he might probably in some little time hear of her again; and that as the loss was but a trifle, he hoped he would not suffer her to be exposed, the price of the cup not being above sixteen or seventeen pounds, though he could not, at that juncture, exactly recollect the weight of it; but indeed it was as neat a one as ever was made by hands, and that his coat of arms was so nicely engraved on it, that it was a perfect curiosity, and really, the only piece of plate that Mrs. Hawthorn, his wife, seemed to have a more than ordinary esteem for, though fortune had blessed his honest endeavours with a great many others; notwithstanding which, he had so great a regard for his worship, and all his good family, not forgetting

ing the unfortunate young lady his cousin, that he should pay him no more than what in truth it cost him."

The reader may easily guess in what kind of humour he must be, at such sort of expostulations ; and though it was very easy to see through all his landlord's cant, yet the dilemma he was in made him submit very prudently, on the part and behalf of an unfortunate justice of the Quorum : accordingly, he gave the tavern-man a great many thanks, and promised to pay him for his cup and wine, but enjoined him to strict secrecy upon that account, which he vowed, with a thousand thanks to his honour and worship, inviolably to observe : but all to no purpose ; for the rogue of a constable, on whom he had laid an embargo, divulged his pretended cousin's elopement to the whole court ; swearing most immoderately, that she was one of the commonest whores in all Westminster, and had been taken up several times before, but was always discharged by doing what was *proper* ; but that part of her trade she had now left for some one else to do, and the devil mend his worship.

This affair was soon carried to the lord-chancellor's ear, who being informed that it was our hero's father who had shewn so much lenity to his unfortunate cousin, sent for him, and told him, that he had heard a report of his behaviour, which had greatly surprised him ; and though transactions of that nature might be passed over as a foible in a young man, yet they were unpardonable in a person so far advanced in life as he was, from whom it could not but be expected, that he should pay a just regard to the honour of the commission, as well as to his own reputation.

C

His

His father most solemnly, as well he might, assured his lordship, that he was an absolute stranger to all or any part of the accusation, and promised to inquire into it.

I cannot take upon myself to say whether, at that time, he suspected our hero to be the subject of the complaint, or not; but, at his first interview, he told him what the lord-chancellor had said to him concerning it; to which he, even before the indictment was opened, in a most filial manner, pleaded guilty; and, as a punishment for the offence, the chancellor ordered his name to be struck out of both commissions: and thus, alas! was he cashiered for his good-nature, and paid sixteen pounds and upwards, without knowing for which of his cousins, or indeed, who the damsel was at any rate, whom he had complimented with so much money.

And now, being free from the labour of the bench, he was at leisure to recollect the excellent advice the inimitable author of *Don Quixote* has given in the following words: "Let the tears of the poor find more compassion, though not more justice, than the information of the rich; and when a beautiful woman comes before thee, turn away thine eyes from her tears, and thy ears from her lamentations, and take time to consider sedately her petition, if thou wouldst not have thy reason and honesty lost in her sighs and tears."

Notwithstanding our hero was now become a reduced officer, yet the lord-chancellor, to whom he had frequent access afterwards, on account of his father's employments, had the good-nature not so much as once to mention the affair to him, but, on the contrary, promised he should have his
interest

interest towards getting any vacant employment that should be proper for him.

In a little time, his father was informed at the privy-seal, that the office of naval-officer of Barbadoes was vacant on account of Mr. Cox, the patentee's having, too long after the queen's demise, neglected to renew his commission; and accordingly, by the lord-chancellor's interest, that employment was granted to him, though it was delayed a great while, on account of a caveat entered against it at the privy-seal, by Sir Charles Cox, the patentee's brother.

The office, which is in some sort of the same nature as that of the commissioners of the customs here, was a very considerable one, and required great security at the custom-house, in which his father prevailed on one Mr. Coalthurst to join him, and accordingly their names were given in, but the perfecting of the bonds was deferred; in which interval his father intimated to him, that if he would consent to dispose of that commission, the money might be applied towards purchasing some other place at home.

He was by no means willing to come into an agreement of that sort, apprehending, as there had been a visible delay in perfecting the bonds, that Sir Charles would use all his interest to get the commission vacated in favour of his brother, for want of our hero's giving security; upon which he had recourse privately to Sir Charles, letting him know, that on a proper consideration, he would continue his brother, who was then at Barbadoes, his deputy.

At length they came to an agreement, and entered into articles, that our hero should have two hundred guineas paid him in hand, and one hun-

dred and fifty pounds yearly, during such time as Mr. Cox should continue his deputy : and as soon as every thing was finished, and the money paid, he launched into a new scene of life, and being willing to appear in some employment or calling, dubbed himself a captain. As he was intimately acquainted with one Mr. Hilliard, who was really a lieutenant of foot, and then recruiting at Wickham in Buckinghamshire, he went directly down to him, being equipped with laced cloaths, for execution of all sorts, male and female, with a ramellies hat of a most enormous size, and a most distinguishable cockade, with a toupee and sword much of a length.

He likewise hired a valet, well qualified in all the branches of his office, a veteran soldier, and, at that time, an out-pensioner of Chelsea college, who had been a campaigner in the services both of Mars and Venus, and most visibly carried about him the honourable scars he had received in both.

His brother officer, who was one of your pretty fellows, and very genteely indebted to his agents and landlords, and all good christians that would confide in his commission, received him with great expressions of joy, at Wickham, under the honourable title of captain, and introduced him, in form, to a set of ladies, who had almost beggared him ; however, upon our hero's discharging some demands on him, which could not be conveniently postponed much longer, the clouds under which he was eclipsed, were a little dispersed, and they entered into the strictest bonds of friendship in regard to themselves, and a conspiracy against all the petticoats in the country : in short, they led a perfect recruiting life, which, in general, is attended with the most extraordinary

nary atchievements of dancing, drinking, gaming, fauntring, dallying, and what not.

But whatever success they might have had in the recruiting scheme, there was soon a visible desertion in their stock, our hero's fund being almost exhausted by entertainments, spies, secret services, and other most necessary articles in a military life.

As his negotiations about his commission of naval-officer, had been transacted with Sir Charles Cox in the most private manner, he had no correspondent in London, but took all things there to be snug and quiet, till about six months after he had left it, upon his reading a news-paper at a post-office at Wickham, he found a paragraph in it, setting forth, that one Mr. Ellis was appointed naval-officer at Barbadoes, upon his resignation: this put him into the utmost confusion, and accordingly he posted next morning to London, where he found that his father, by the lord-chancellor's approbation, had got his patent revoked, and, for nine hundred guineas, granted to the gentleman mentioned in the advertisement; and that Sir Charles Cox had procured a writ against him for two thousand pounds, being the penalty in the agreement for his brother's deputation: so that he was obliged to abscond, having, *bona fide*, lost his real commission, and disqualified himself from pursuing his intended one; and, from all the gaieties of an inconsiderate life, was at once reduced to the apprehensions of being every moment laid in a gaol.

From this unhappy circumstance arose all the misfortunes that attended him afterwards; and he has oftentold me, that from thence, in many a sorrowful

rowful hour, he has reflected how visibly the hand of Providence disappoints such courses as, too often, inconsiderate youth takes against its own interest, in contempt of the best advice and direction of friends.

Till then he never had any real concern for, or reflection about his own welfare : but now he began to consider, that he had not any pretensions whatever to apply to the lord-chancellor for any further favours ; nor could he, with any countenance, appear in the company he used to keep, which, on account of the station his father was in, had been of the best sort. After spending the small remainder of the two hundred guineas, in the greatest obscurity and dread of Sir Charles Cox, he took a lodging in a garret in the verge of the board of green-cloth (a privileged place near Whitehall ;) where he got the instructive and parsimonious acquaintance of disbanded officers, reduced gentlemen, broken citizens, (and the merriest animals in misfortunes) starving Frenchmen, under whom he improved himself into a perfect camelion and philosopher ; having not only acquired a thorough contempt for even the necessities of life, but brought himself into an habit of living without them ; and for want of warmer lodgings, he has spent many a night in St. James's Park, making his observations on the heavenly bodies, without any other sustenance than what he sucked in by the respiration of the lungs.

On account of these circumstances, he came to a determination of going abroad to some of his majesty's islands ; and as often as he could, with any safety, went to several masters of ships bound to Jamaica, Philadelphia, and North-Carolina, who, upon finding by his discourse that he had
been

been clerk to an attorney, gave him no encouragement to change the climate he was in, and in sober truth, a very cold one it then was! but on the contrary told him, that tradesmen and labourers were the persons wanting in those islands, and not attorneys; to whom and their profession, I believe, those amphibious gentlemen, are, from the captain to his swabber, professed enemies; and really, if our hero had been a proper cargo, he had not six-pence to pay his passage with.

At last he resolved, the rebellion in Scotland and at Preston being just broke out, to go a volunteer in some of the regiments on that expedition, and being personally acquainted with general Carpenter, he applied to him to be a cadet in one of the troops of his dragoons.

The general, in a very genteel manner, told him, that he was sorry to see him necessitated to ask so small a favour from him, who was ready to do him the best services in his power on his father's account; but assured him, there were so many young gentlemen in that station then in his regiment, whom he had long since promised to provide for, that it would not be in his power to do him any service in that particular: however, he wrote a recommendatory letter in his behalf to major Whitworth, who had a troop in colonel Pitt's regiment of horse, then quartered at Stafford in their march to Preston.

The major, who was not unacquainted either with his father or himself, gave him a very civil reception, and a letter to lieutenant Naizon, who lately died a colonel of a regiment of dragoons.

Lieutenant Naizon entertained him on sight, and ordered him to the Queen's-Head in the Hay-market, where one of his corporals, some

recruits, and a number of new-raised horses were then quartered, expecting orders to march to Stafford, in order to join the regiment.

Among the recruits, to his great satisfaction, were two young gentlemen, who were cadets; one of them son to his majesty's surgeon-general, and surgeon to that regiment, who was afterwards captain of foot, and died in this kingdom some few years since; and the other, Mr. Otway, brother to lieutenant colonel Otway.

With these gentlemen he commenced a very pleasant, and afterwards, an intimate acquaintance, each of them, by their want of experience in life, being fellow-sufferers, as well as fellow-soldiers.

As soon as orders came for their marching, which was in about a week's time, they made the best of their way to Stafford, where they were cloathed, and their horses and accoutrements given them.

This new sort of life seemed very unaccountable to him, who from being accustomed to lie in bed half the day, was now wakened every morning as soon as it was light, by a levet from the trumpet, and obliged to handle a curry-comb and brush, implements he had of all others been the least used to: But what he had the greatest aversion to, was riding in a long white linen-frock, and a blue cap lined with red cloth, without a saddle, to water; and afterwards, parading in that drole figure, at his officer's quarters, where, perhaps, after the troop had sat half an hour, entertaining themselves with a great deal of bodily wit, the corporal would vouchsafe to inform

inform them, that his honour, the captain, went bloody drunk to bed, and was fast asleep.

On their arrival at quarters, he was introduced in form to the corporal, who, in sure and certain hopes of a great deal of liquor, told him, that as he was informed, he was a gentleman, he would teach him his exercise privately, and accordingly did so, in a back yard of one of the inns; at which times, he expatiated largely on the use of the carbine, and how manly an exercise handling one of them to perfection was, in which he assured him he had arrived to the character of excelling even his adjutant: but however obliging he was in giving him private instructions, he has told me, that by the corporal's morning and evening draughts, which, to do him justice, were very considerable, he could not keep six-pence in his pocket, and by those means got in debt to his landlord and the clerk of the troop, who, to his everlasting honour, understood multiplication as well as Sir Isaac Newton.

To prevent the chambalier (a leather strop fixed to a long pole) coming too often cross his shoulders, he was obliged to give the riding-master a pair of buckskin-breeches, and so commuted for not being able to sit up streight in his saddle, by going half naked himself; indeed he stood very well in the barber's opinion, having exchanged a tye-wig with him worth a couple of guineas, for one with about twenty hairs on a side, at the end of which hung a pendulum inlaid with pack-thread, and twisted with black leather.

But of all the plagues attending a gentleman trooper, he thought that of a pushing-master was

the greatest, nothing being sufficient to satisfy him ; for besides the trouble he was at in procuring him ale and drams upon trust, he had neither coat, wig, or shirt, but must be on duty at his command, and particularly when he went to exercise his files with his country scholars ; and tho' he undertook to make our hero in a week's time, as strait as a lath, to stand like oak on his pasterns, and as nimble as an eel, yet it is reported that he knew no more of the science of defence when he left the regiment than when he came to it, for in truth his master was always drunk or drinking.

All these supernumerary expences came at a very improper time ; for the night before our hero left London, he determined to try his fortune at gaming, and accordingly went to a roly-poly table in Drury-Lane, with what little money he had collected from some of his friends, whom he had acquainted with his lifting into Pitts's horse : but, unfortunately, he brought from thence but one solitary crown ; and had it not been for the assistance and generosity of his comrades, the two cadets, he must have had a most melancholy march to Stafford : his corporal, who knew much better how to improve by misfortunes, than lessen them, at the same time alledged, that he was in his debt, nor had he any expectations of a supply when his march should be at an end, except from his forlorn hope, the tye-wig before-mentioned.

The regiment had not been long at Stafford, when the towns-men, the most rebellious of any of his late majesty's subjects, rose on them, and in the skirmish killed one of the troopers, and they

they two of the inhabitants ; from which time they were in one continued state of war.

This kind of life, in some small time, did not seem so disagreeable to our hero as at first ; though he wished for an increase of his pay, which was little more than six-pence a day for his maintenance, exclusive of his horse, except some few shillings, clearings, at the end of every month, long enough before which he was most assuredly indebted to the clerk of the troop, his landlord, and every other good christian that had faith and hope enough to trust him ; but what made it something more comfortable than usual, was, that his military achievements began just before the battle of Preston, upon which account the regiment was pretty easy as to the expences of their diet, for which many times they paid little or nothing, and at other times, according to the disposition they found the several inhabitants in, made their quarters good ; a word of command, I have often heard him say, that was the most punctually obeyed of all others.

About this time there was an account that the Scotch rebels, depending on the insurrection in England, had, with the earl of Derwentwater and Foster, at the head of them, got together a body of above three hundred men, and by the middle of October, 1715, had joined another party of horse and foot from Stotland, amounting in all to about fifteen hundred men, Scotch and English ; and in most of such of the towns in Lancashire which they had marched through, they had proclaimed the pretender, and had even shewn their malice in so low a degree, as to cut off
his

his majesty's head in every sign and picture they met with.

The regiment our hero was in, was the first that appeared against them, and lay on the Ribble Moor, just below the town of Preston in which the rebels had barricaded themselves, eight and forty hours before any other regiment came to their assistance, expecting every moment that the enemy would fall out and cut them to pieces; which, through cowardice, or some other infatuation, they neglected to do.

At length, the forces under the generals Wills and Carpenter came up, the regiments under whose commands were for the most part new levies (except Preston's foot) and they being commanded to attack the town, most of them were killed or wounded by shots from the hedges and ditches in their march up to it, or from the windows of the houses afterwards.

General Honeywood was dangerously wounded in the knee; and most of the regiments being raw and undisciplined, some of the men retreated from the town in great confusion, though positive orders were given, on pain of death, to set the town on fire at each end of it; upon which, ten men out of each troop in the regiment our hero was in were ordered to be dismounted; that regiment formerly having been Harvy's, and had behaved with remarkable bravery in all the wars with Spain; and the extraordinary occasion of these orders, was to prevent the new raised regiments from retreating, under an express command, that their dismounted men should fire their pistols at every man that attempted to make his escape.

Though

Though our hero was but a recruit, it came to his turn, by the corporal's telling off the men, to be on that command. While they lay on the moor, they were plentifully supplied by the loyalists, with cold meat, bread, cheese, and tobacco, together with drink, and great quantities of brandy and gin; very necessary ingredients, as well for courage as warmth, the weather being most excessively cold, and the whole regiment by turns obliged to stand at their horses heads.

He has often confessed, that he was not fond of the lot that had fallen to him, which was but a sort of a forlorn hope; but young as he was, he determined that the general character of the corps, in regard to its bravery, should not suffer on his account, so girding on his tin cannister (one of which every man had to secure his liquor in) and taking a comfortable dose of gin, he marched, with great intrepidity on the command of setting the town on fire, with his pistols ready loaded in his belt.

The assault was no sooner begun, but with what sight he had left from the contents of the cannister, which was not the most distinguishing, he imagined he saw a great many of the dragoons drop on all sides of him, though the persons who fired on them were invisible; but when he observed any man to fall in the front, he fired one of his pistols at the same time, that the dragoon troops might imagine, that the person so falling, had been shot for attempting to retreat. This was so far beyond his command, that afterwards he very narrowly escaped being punished for so doing; and possibly not without the solicitations of some of the dragoon officers, who thought, that regiment's

ment's being dismounted on such an occasion, was an affront to them; and indeed he could not help confessing, but that he had exceeded his natural prowess, by the great assistance he had received from the ammunition he was supplied with from his tin magazine.

It was indeed a terrible sight to see so many young men knocked on the head in such a manner, in the front, and some of them (it is to be feared) receiving the same fate in the rear; which was, without doubt, occasioned by their being raw and unacquainted with discipline; some of the regiments at that action, not having been raised above a month before it, though probably they would have made a much better stand with a good allowance of his ammunition: however, notwithstanding the slaughter was so great, not one of his dismounted party was lost, though his own, and several other of the men's coats and accoutrements were shot through; which was enough to convince the most inflexible advocate for free-will, that every ball has its billet.

This attempt of setting the town on fire, though the loss occasioned by it was considerable, so dispirited the rebels within, that they begged a cessation of arms, in order to surrender on terms; which being refused them, on the Sunday morning following they surrendered at discretion; upon which, the foot and dragoons entered the town, and, contrary to command, plundered it.

The regiment our hero belonged to, to his inexpressible disappointment, was ordered to Lancaster, and not one of them so much as suffered to pay a visit to the worthy gentlemen they had se-

cured, who, to the best of his knowledge, were about fourteen or fifteen hundred, with the lord Derwentwater, and some other Scotch noblemen, besides several English gentlemen, together with the worshipful Mr. justice Hall, and their pious chaplain the reverend Mr. Paul, at the head of them: About five hundred of the king's troops were killed, but what loss the enemy sustained he could never find out.

The day after the town had surrendered, his regiment, which still continued in its former incampment, was posted at the avenues leading to it, in order to kill or take prisoners any who should attempt to make their escapes, and accordingly the centinels were placed very near one another.

It was a bright moon-light night, the second after the surrender of the town, when our hero heard an horse galloping towards his post; he was very well prepared to stop him in his career, though he was so civil as not to put him to the expence of powder and ball to bring it about, for the rider dropped off him just as he came up to his post, having received a shot from the centinel above him, who had lodged a ball in his back. He appeared to be quite speechless, which was rather occasioned by the fall from his horse than the shot, there being a great contusion on the left side of his head; and indeed, had it been otherwise, our hero, it is thought, would have had very little conversation with him; it being what he had about him, and not an historical entertainment, which he wanted.

He was a lusty, strapping fellow, dressed in a good suit of brown cloaths, the breast of which was thoroughly embroidered with snuff, and his
nose

nose quite stuffed with the same ingredient; he had on his head a black tye-wig, with a most extensive front to it, and a plad waistcoat; from which dress and embellishments, he concluded he was a Scotchman, in which opinion he was afterwards confirmed, for upon searching him, he found several letters in his pockets, some of them directed to Aberdeen, some to Sterling, and others to Renfrew.

He gave many a wishful look after the horse, which he had much more value for than his master, though the unnatural beast had not the civility to wait for him; and, on that account, became, together with his furniture, the property of the sentinel who was on the next post beyond him: However, he took care to drag his carcase by the heels to the place he was posted at; and though it was the first time that he ever picked the pockets either of the living or of the dead, he ransacked those of his enemy very judiciously; but, as he was not quite dead, our hero was under some apprehensions of his rising up again, and very prudently kept a pistol in his right hand, while he was searching his pockets with his left: what made him so much on his guard, was, that his prisoner was a plaguy large fellow, and he remembered to have heard, that a Scotchman of that size, and rebellious constitution, was not to be trusted dead or alive.

However, his prize did not answer his expectations, for he found but one solitary guinea in his pockets, with two or three shillings, and a pocket-book, in which was a promissory note for fourteen pounds, payable to the lord knows whom, with some hieroglyphical memorandums
that

that he could not explain, together with the letters mentioned before ; of all which moveables he took a legal and actual possession, and then uncased him of his cloaths ; which, with a moderate allowance to the taylor, would fairly have made two suits, at that time, for our hero ; but the Scotch apparel was converted into ready money, and from that, by a very easy transition, into different sorts of liquor, except the great coat, in which he afterwards found two shirts, a silk handkerchief, and a capacious and ever-memorable snuff-mull.

Upon reading the letters, he found that the purport of them all was, that he, and his friends had been betrayed by their general (Forster) with a most sorrowful account of their surrender, full of treasonable expressions, not fit to be recited, concluding with a detail of the deplorable condition they were in.

This was all the plunder our hero got at Preston, where there was but one man lost out of the regiment he was in, who was an officer's servant.

In some little time after the surrender, the regiment was commanded from Lancaster back to Preston, where they were received with the natural welcome arising from a plundered town, and disaffected inhabitants, by whom they were treated after the Indian way of worship, more out of dread than regard ; though their fears had civilized them a little, and instead of six-pence, they furnished the troops for a groat a day, with as good entertainment as they could desire ; and, notwithstanding the soldiers had pretty well stripped the town of its effects, they left, as it was plainly to be observed afterwards, a great supply
of

of children in their stead ; and every one of the ladies, who were with child and not married, laid their pregnancy to compulsion ; though it is not to be doubted, but that they had submitted to a great many of the rebels, without the unnecessary forms of a siege on that occasion, whatever seeming resistance they might have made to some of his late majesty's able-bodied grenadiers.

In this town, several of the English gentlemen of the neighbourhood, who had been in the rebellion, were executed, and some of their heads were fixed on the market-house ; and three half-pay officers on the English pay and establishment, who had most shamefully deserted to the enemy's party, were shot, without raising any degree of compassion ; nor did they seem to desire any at the place of execution, but died with a great deal more resolution than they lived with. Such often is the force of religious and politic bigotry.

Our Hero was afterwards one of the party who conducted lords Derwentwater, Kenilure, Nithsdale, and general Forster, in company with old M'Intosh, to Coventry ; with their ghostly father, and most excellent example of justice, before-mentioned : the duty on that occasion was very severe, five and twenty of the men being every night centinels at the several inns on the road where the prisoners lay, some of them within the rooms where they were confined, and the rest at the stairs-head or back-doors, or other places necessary to be guarded.

During their being on this command, they were plentifully entertained at the prisoners expence, most of whom appeared to be tolerably chearful, except M'Intosh, who was full as four
in

in his disposition as in his countenance, which was the epitome of ill-nature, to such a degree, that he avoided all manner of converse with the rest of his unfortunate brethren; and, as our hero had wove himself indifferently well into the conversation of most of the other gentlemen, he endeavoured likewise to be in the same situation with him; and for that purpose shewed him, sometimes, a particular regard, which he scornfully rejected, with no other appellation to gentlemen of his rank and distinction, than you fellow; though he took it to arise from the natural dislike he had to the colour of his coat, and the master he served.

Most of the rest of the gentlemen, but especially lord Derwentwater, who was a very handsome young nobleman, behaved very decently, appearing neither haughty nor dejected; but the parson was most immoderately out of humour, and his zeal had quite eaten him up; he was very full of indefeasible, hereditary right, passive obedience and non-resistance, and constantly drank to the health of, and prayed publicly for, the the pretender, and afterwards died a most apostolical martyr for him at Tyburn: as to the justice of the peace, he was quite stupified, conformably to the character he bore at home; in the absence of his pipe and tankard, and without a potation extraordinary, his worship would not utter four and twenty sentences in as many hours, and those consisted of complaints against the parson for his doctrinal inferences, which had introduced him to an halter.

General Forster's carriage was quite reserved, and he chose to be confined in a room every
night

night by himself, which was pleasing enough to the rest of his companions, who, to a man, charged him with having betrayed them; and his being permitted to escape afterwards, from Newgate verified that suspicion.

At St. Albans all the prisoners were delivered over to other troops sent thither for that purpose, amidst such a concourse of spectators from London, as perhaps hardly ever met together before, to the great terror of the prisoners, who, as they had foreseen, were afterwards handled very roughly by the mob: upon this account they parted, with great reluctancy, with their former attendants, to whom they ordered five guineas as a gratuity for the civility they had used them with; and though this was received from the hands of friends to the pretender, yet it was expended very chearfully, in drinking his late majesty's health, and confusion to all his enemies and their adherents.

Their march back to Preston was by no means unpleasant, the five guineas being a sort of forage of a very acceptable nature, and their quarters, by such time as they arrived at them, very agreeable: what made this the more so to our hero, was the intimate acquaintance he had contracted with his cornet Mr. Lowe, who was a very handsome young gentleman, and remarkably genteel, had a very good estate besides his commission, dressed out in all the gaities of the army, and, to his immortal honour, was a great admirer of the ladies, and by no means disliked by them; the natural consequence of so many engaging qualifications.

Our

Our hero was his aid-de-camp upon extraordinary commands, and his companion upon other occasions, as a cadet who expected a commission very soon, and a considerable estate after his father's death ; and upon either of those accounts, he was enabled to make no despicable figure, having the assistance of his cornet's embroidered cloaths, toupee wigs, laced hats and cockades, black silk cravats, ruffled shirts, sweet-scented bottles and snuff-boxes of all sorts and sizes, and all other martial embellishments belonging to an officer of horse, our hero being of much the same size and complexion with his cornet : as the emergency of affairs required, he was sometimes his valet, and was full as deep in intrigues with the maids, as his cornet was with their mistresses ; and Mr. George was often as much the topic of the family's conversation as his master, and allowed to be a smart fellow, though whether legitimate or not was a question undetermined.

There was a young lady, who lived but a few miles from Preston, to whom the cornet made his addresses in an honourable way : the young lady's father was a violent party-man, and quite on the wrong side of the question ; consequently he could not endure any one that belonged to the army ; and was indeed so prejudiced in his opinion against the gentlemen of that profession, that he imagined every red-coat, that paid him a visit, came with an intention to plunder him : the battle of Preston was, in his opinion, a downright massacre, and all such as had been executed on that account, were martyrs and saints ; which, and a great many sentiments of that nature, were implanted in him, by
his

his parish-minister and proto-martyr, Mr. Paul, who had been his spiritual guide many years.

This gentleman, who possessed a large estate, had two daughters, and a niece whose fortune was left in his hands by the will of her father : the cornet's acquaintance in this family was by means of a clergyman, who had been his school-fellow, and was the gentleman's neighbour : by the genteelness of his carriage, he had got into great esteem with him ; though the colour of his cloth was almost sufficient to have introduced him to one who had the church so much at heart, especially in the prerogative part of it : this clergyman, besides his spiritual qualifications, was a very facetious companion, an excellent scholar, and quite free from that demure and solemn behaviour, which some gentlemen of that profession too often practise, for want perhaps of a proper acquaintance with the world.

With this clergyman our hero, by his cornet's means, had created some intimacy, who, previous to their first interview, had acquainted him of our hero's expectation of getting a commission, and of his being heir to a good estate ; the last of which was a very necessary preliminary to his introduction to the gentleman, of whose daughter his cornet was enamoured : she was a very pretty young lady, and intitled to a very good fortune, though, most unluckily for the cornet, altogether in her father's power ; besides, the cloth he wore was of a very bad colour in her father's eyes ; though perhaps the young lady, as abundance of her sex have, had quite another opinion of it : so that, whatever success he might hope for from her, he had, to all appearance, a long siege to make before

before he could expect to gain ground on the father.

However, the cornet, who was no bad engineer, determined on the attack at all events ; and no wonder for him, for the garrison was a very good one, and no man living could be more intent on making a breach in it than he was ; so that he proceeded in his approaches, on both the daughter and father, in form.

Her cousin, to whom our hero had been properly introduced, and to whose share he was in hopes she would fall, had a fortune of about fifteen hundred pounds, intirely at her own disposal, except that it was in her uncle's hands. It is true that she was not the most complete beauty, nor indeed had many other charms than what consisted in her money ; for, in the opinion of such as had not an immediate view to that, she was red-haired, of a very low stature, and not a little distorted, had very small eyes, was much freckled, and, apparently, wanted several of her teeth ; misfortunes, one would be apt to imagine, that might readily have provoked her to give her assent and consent to matrimonial preferment : our hero, however, made his addresses to her, perhaps the first she ever received ; and that they might not be long ineffectual, he began with what he was apprehensive his friend the clergyman had acquainted her with ; how that he soon would have a commission, and, at the death of his father, a very considerable estate ; with some other little assurances, perhaps not altogether orthodox ; but to prove the first part of his pretensions, he had his cornet's concurrent testimony.

In

In answer to all this, she told him with a smile in her countenance, That she did not, in the least, doubt of the truth of what his friends and he had asserted ; but, at the same time, took care to let him know, that though she was not strictly in her uncle's power in regard to her fortune, yet she was determined not to marry without his consent ; a declaration which he neither expected nor approved of, being well acquainted with the cornet's treatment, and what a confounded aversion her uncle had to all gentlemen of the blade : however, *en chevalier*, he let her know, that if he could be so happy as to gain her consent, he did not in the least doubt of her uncle's, who being an excellent bottle-companion, he was sure that he should be able to strengthen his interest more with him, after twelve o'clock at night, than the cornet, who was an entire enemy to drinking, could do in four and twenty hours ; nor could he perceive, that his mistress was at all averse to his proceeding ; so that he was not without hopes, but that on some occasion or other, he should bring her uncle into the alliance, but particularly by downright dint of drinking ; which was a stronger argument to him of his being an honest fellow, than if he had brought him a certificate to that purpose, under the hands and seals of all the parishioners where he was born : but, notwithstanding all his expectations from the noble science of the bottle, he was in the end mistaken ; for her uncle was informed by some mischievous devil or other, that he was making his addresses to her in a clandestine manner ; and one morning, he heartily wished it had been in an evening, he desired him, very soberly, to give himself no farther

ther trouble, either in visiting himself, or his niece, unless he desisted from addressing her in the manner, he was informed, he had done.

Our hero found this quite too sober an hour to enter on a debate with him, on a subject from which he had so much expectation, and very abruptly, at that time, only replied, That he feared some ill-offices had been done him undeservedly in regard to his niece ; and that, if he continued in so unkind a resolution, he must, though with the utmost concern, comply with it.

Though, in reality, this submission was intended to be continued no longer in force, than the first opportunity he could get of a midnight's conversation with him ; and depended a good deal on the parson's interest with him, who was of an excellent disposition towards making an end of all feuds and misunderstandings whatsoever ; and as he got an opportunity of sitting with the squire till past twelve at night, and found the fit, " Mr. George, thou art a very honest fellow," coming on him, he attacked him most manfully, in regard to his niece, and told him, ' That, indeed, at present, he had not a fortune equivalent to that of his niece's, but that he was sure he was above a dirty Smithfield bargain, and that the difference of a little money should never destroy a friendship like theirs, so well built, and cemented with the contents of so many bottles ; a foundation that could never decay, if it was kept up with a proper supply of the materials then before them ; and farther, that as soon as he had got his commission, or estate, he hoped he should be enabled to shew his gratitude to him, for any assent he should give towards his being married to his

D

niece,

niece, the most desirable girl living, and by Miss Kitty's means, entering into an happy alliance with him.'

But as honest a fellow as he was the moment before, in the old gentleman's opinion, he now began to ride rusty, and swore most immoderately, 'That he hated the thought of an officer, of what stile, title, or denomination soever, and had rather be related to the devil than a red-coat, and that his niece had better lead apes in hell, than follow a scarlet coat and breeches, in which there was seldom more gold than what made its appearance on the outsides of the pockets; and that as to his estate, for aught he knew, it lay in the clouds; for that it did not sufficiently appear to him that he had a foot of land under them;' at the same time telling him, by way of interlude, with a blow of his fist on the stomach, 'That he liked his jokes and way of drinking well enough, but desired him, that if hereafter he intended to continue those diversions, that he would give up the matter about Kitty.'

His friend the parson, who staid later than ordinary, with a view that a reconciliation might be brought about, if possible, by his means, was quite disqualified from being of service to him; for being, in a great measure, dependant on the squire, he could not, with any prudence, be a stickler on our hero's side; but, whatever, his inclinations might be, he most piously exhorted him, 'That whenever he intended to enter into the holy state of matrimony, that, first and foremost, he ought to get into some visible possession or other, and not to trust entirely to expectations, reversions and remainders; a jargon that none but
the

the gentlemen of the law understood, and which, he had often heard, were not proper settlements on any young lady of fortune, especially his patron's niece, a lady of universal merit, and in the highest reputation for all that was valuable and praise-worthy in her sex; and, secondly, that it was time enough, as well in a political as a religious sense, when he was in the actual possession of an estate or the like, to ask the consent of the lady's parents, in which rank, though perhaps not taken notice of in the canons of matrimony, he thought an uncle stood; a consent which, he was sure, would sanctify all the comforts and blessings attending the holy state of matrimony.' His whole sermon was plain, and, at first, instructive to the squire, but had so much opium in its composition, that had not his natural propensity to the glass awakened him, doubtless an inference or two more from the doctor would have put him to sleep till the next day; nor could our hero deny his reverence's consequences, and, for fear of a farther explanation, he chose not to reply, but altered the subject of the discourse to others of a quite different nature; and the doctor having made his retreat, at the end of his spiritual admonition, the squire and our hero were very noisy till day-light, when they parted very good friends, in every other particular except the marriage-articles.

But however untractable the young lady's uncle was, he had received no orders to withdraw from his niece, but had, with her consent, an intercourse of love by letters; the stile of which, no man living, except one smitten to the heart in love, could understand, quite beyond all manner

of decyphering with any key but that ; and that being our hero's condition, he could now and then legibly discern, that there were but few scruples on Miss Kitty's part ; as how, ' My uncle is a very queer man, that is poz ; and, dear Sirs, is it not enough for him to take care of his own daughter ? Sure I am not such a fool neither, as to want a slabbering-bib ; why, look you now, a gentleman is a gentleman, suppose he had not six pence in the universal world ; why, my mamma was as young as I when she married ; and she would be laughing and saying often enough, that after my dada put the question home to her, she never troubled him with your nonsensical stuff about estates and the lord knows what, but consented to marry him directly ; and sure enough, they say, he was one of the best husbands in the world.' But however, she very judiciously concluded, ' that her uncle was her uncle still.'

He acquainted his cornet with every step he took, who, though he had gained no ground in his own approaches to his mistress, yet he would by no means give up the siege, our hero's attacks still going on with more expectation of success than his ; for, at length, by the infallible doctrine of a modest assurance, deep protestations, and his dying for love of the most extraordinary object Miss Kitty, she promised to make him happy in the bonds of matrimony.

But alas ! unhappy man, born to be the butt of ill fortune, he was, notwithstanding all this, disappointed ; and after his being proof against all the shots and darts of a most dangerous assailant, he lost his enamorata by the inexorable hand of death, who, in a few weeks after their mutual promises,

promises, and never-to-be-broken assurances of love, tenderness, and affection, she was hurried out of this transitory life, by a spotted fever, leaving him, poor man! an inconsolable turtle, for the loss of his hoped-for virtuous mate, at least for what would have purchased him a commission, though, not impossible, at an exorbitant price.

Our hero's cornet, weary at last of his pursuit, gave up the chase, and saw his mistress, about two months after, taken alive by a neighbouring fox-hunter. In this, and all other instances, he had done him what services were in his power, and made him a partner in all the pleasures of his life; and it now came to our hero's turn to serve him.

He had (as on the like occasions he was ever successful) made most violent love to a farmer's daughter, and proceeded so far as to make it absolutely necessary that she should be married, and that too without delay. To bring this about with secrecy, his cornet applied to him to look out for a husband for her, one that would not be too scrupulous; one, that if his spouse should have tripped a little beforehand, would not be of so incredulous a temper, as to imagine that she could not recover her step; one that would not refuse to be a purchaser, tho' there possibly might be some little flaw in the title; but one more particularly, if possible, belonging to the regiment; a plain indication of his great love and tenderness for her, whose interest he had so affectionately engaged in, and the most laudable instance of the regard he had to her future usage.

There was in one of the troops, belonging to the squadron our hero was in, a Frenchman,

whose name was Lewis Rammay, detested by every one in it, on account of his insolent behaviour, one of the most affected animals living, so proud of himself, that he despised all mankind, of a pretty good stature, and particularly nice in the buckling and dressing of his hair, which reached down to the middle of his back; he hated the company of men, and was a mere dupe to the women, but had saved more money than was usual for one in his way of life, doubtless with a view to marriage; the sinking fund of all such parsimonious youths, tho' possibly, not to such a sort of a wife, as our hero had the honour of introducing Monsieur Rammay to.

After our hero had been let into the secret of his way of life and conversation, which it was no difficult matter to be acquainted with, being quartered together in the same town; and really gentlemen troopers often live as it were in common, their ladies having seen too much of the world to be over scrupulous, or too nice in their behaviour; a worthy example to all prudes of what rank or distinction soever.

Our hero being acquainted with his conduct and character, took an opportunity of letting monsieur Rammay know, that he was surprized at his refusing so many offers, as of necessity he must have done in regard to marriage, expatiating very largely on his accomplishments, and the genteelness of his person, but particularly his captivating head of hair, which he assured him had done more execution in the country than the equipages of all the officers in the regiment.

He

He seemed mighty well pleased with his conversation, and tho' our hero had dressed himself out in all the complaisance he could borrow, having very little himself, yet Monsieur Rammay exceeded him beyond all conception, and, in a moment, twisted his hair into a thousand figures, walking up and down so nimbly, and bowed with such an air, that our hero has confessed that he was quite out of countenance at his own aukward appearance; and after his prologue to matrimony was at an end, Monsieur Rammay told him that he had some desire to try his fortune in the marriage-lottery; 'But then you know, comrade,' says he, 'that our pay is very small, hardly sufficient for one of ourselves, much less for a wife and children, of the last of which, comrade, you may be sure I shall have enough, if it be not the girl's fault; for look you, comrade, I am cut out for that sort of diversion, and, tho' I say it that should not, you will hardly see a young fellow better built.

But then again, you know, comrade, the officers, the plaguy officers, we cannot keep them from our wives; and for my own part, let your countrymen think as they please, I had rather be reduced to a foot-soldier, than be made a cuckold: no, no; no horns for Monsieur Rammay, so that in short, Mr. George, one had as good be as one is, unless there was a good round penny to be got by the bargain.'

He told his brother trooper that the money was what he designed to have mentioned, and that he could introduce him to a mighty virtuous country-girl, whose father could give her a good round sum; a girl for whose father their cornet had a

great regard, which by all appearance would be an additional advantage to him, and that tho' he was but a trooper, he very well deserved such an one, and that doubtless by his person and address he would soon get her.

At mentioning the cornet's name, he made a most arch figure, and half a dozen bows extraordinary, "gad, comrade," says he, "the cornet is as well known among the girls as myself, and has made as many cuckolds as ever Bartholomew Fair did; why, man, he is very devil, and tho' I cannot say but that he is a good-natured gentleman, yet his being acquainted with the person that is to be my wife, is a 'coup de grace' that I should not chuse;" concluding with the sag end of a French song, which I could not distinctly understand.

Our hero took no manner of notice of the solidity of his judgment, in regard to the untoward remark he had made on the cornet, but proceeded, by telling him, that this affair was to be transacted very privately, and that he would take the first opportunity that offered, of going with him to her father's, with whom he was acquainted by the cornet's means; but that as soon as he had introduced him to the girl, the affair must be carried on elsewhere, that he might secure her affections, before he communicated his design to her father; and really what made our hero so earnest in this undertaking was, the unhappy circumstances of the poor girl, whose virtue had been betrayed to one, whom it was very difficult to withstand; and there was something so moving in her ruin, that he endeavoured, as much as he could, to alleviate it, knowing from the natural simplicity of her

her life, that if she was once abandoned she must fall into such circumstances as she could never support herself under.

The poor girl, an unhappy victim to love, consented with great reluctance to practise some few lessons she received from the cornet and his agent, on this occasion; which as it was a very weighty one, and full time that matters should be brought to an issue, it was very necessary she should do, and after the first interview, the grass-guard was the place agreed on for meeting at afterwards (it being the season of the year for the troop-horses being at grass) and for expedition sake, monsieur Ramma and our hero were put on that duty, whether it was their turn or not; where, he has often told me, that he has heard the most prevailing arguments made use of to accomplish, what the person addressed to was in the utmost hurry to have concluded; vows of fidelity and love, in a French jargon, paid to what the worshipper took to be the shrine of the most unspotted chastity.

And there, in that delightful retirement; did his fellow-trooper, the Adonis of the regiment, fall so deeply in love, and so desperate was his condition, that to preserve his own life, and his mistress's expiring credit, the match was made up in a week's time; and the marriage had, and solemnized by the chaplain of the regiment, at a proper entertainment made on so happy an occasion, to the great gratification of the cornet, and no small satisfaction to our hero, who had been truly assiduous in bringing so necessary an affair to a conclusion; though he never saw so much secret grief in the looks of any person before, as

he then did in those of the bride, who never ceased from weeping, all the time the ceremony was performing; and at supper discovered the sentiments of her heart by her sighs; the sight of which, I have heard our hero say, if he had been of her sex, would have made him proof, not only against the attacks of a single cornet, but of his majesty's army in general; and to add to her grief, as it was not convenient to wait for her father's consent beforehand, he refused her his blessing afterwards; and she, from thence forward, became the sole property of monsieur Lewis Rammay; and, I believe, as pregnant an instance of multiplying as was ever met with; for, in less than five months, madam Rammay was delivered of twins: The wedlock father was so ashamed of the premature birth, and afraid of such extraordinary increases in his family, that he deserted from the regiment, without so much as staying to see the babes christened, very judiciously leaving them to the right owner; and what was their destiny after his desertion, it is reported, very few knew so well as the cornet; by whose solicitations, madam Rammay, being thus delivered of her Frenchman and children, was, in some sort restored to the favour of her relations, and our hero considerably advanced in his confidence; and though monsieur Rammay was not used in the most friendly manner, yet it gave no little pleasure to those that were acquainted with him, to see his intolerable pride and conceit suppressed at any rate; especially where so clever a girl was the heroine of the tragedy.

Thus far things went mighty well between the cornet and our hero; but, at length, he very narrowly

narrowly escaped with his life, by his compliance with an idle request of his cornet.

There was one Wilson, a strong, able, raw-boned, young fellow, with some of whose relations the cornet was acquainted in London; and he, at the cornet's request, was entertained in the regiment some time after the battle of Preston; this youth had so violent an itch to gaming, and was such a bubble to the knowing-ones in that mystery, that in a very little time he had not a shilling left of what he brought with him from London, nor much more of his equipage than a single shirt; he had been reprov'd by the cornet in friendship to him, several times, but to no manner of purpose, upon which account, he determined to find out some more effectual means to stop his progress in that sort of vice; and unlucky enough for our hero, he was the person the cornet pitched upon for that purpose; our hero being directed by him to find out the places of his resort and gaming, and the first opportunity that offered, whether he won or lost, to take what money he could get from him; which in some short time after he accordingly did, and contrary to all the statutes against trover and conversion, he unjustly and unlawfully detained the same.

This recruit being very young, and quite unacquainted with the strict rules of honour, bore the loss of his money with great resignation and temper of mind, and more like a philosopher than a trooper.

All was still and quiet for some days, till some of the old men refused to admit him into their company at a public meeting; and upon his de-

manding the reason of it, he was told, that if he could tamely suffer such an insult to be put on him, he had no business to continue any longer in that regiment; and at last spirited him up to such a pitch of resentment that he sent our hero a challenge, though not in the most exact form, yet significant enough to let him know, if his money was not forthwith returned, and his pardon begged, he would take an opportunity of cleaving his skull; and for that purpose he had made choice of his broad-sword, and desired he would meet him with the fellow of it; and that the place of combat was to be in a meadow at the lower end of the town.

The whole money our hero had taken in that extraordinary manner from his brother-trooper, and brought to the cornet, did not amount to more than twelve shillings, and what every cautious man would think not worth fighting for; nor did our hero in the least suspect the challenge to be a real one, from the oddity of the person who brought it, and the words it was delivered in, the trooper's messenger being one of the regimental shoe-boys, and what confirmed him in his opinion that the challenger would not fight at any rate was, his being, though a Gentleman trooper, one of a very sheepish look, and dastardly behaviour; and so our hero very triumphantly went to the place appointed, properly accoutered, according to his antagonist's request: however, on his march, and while he had this piece of knight-errantry under a more intense contemplation, he began to consider upon what a ridiculous errand he was going, and that a little ferocity added to the strength and agility of his antagonist, might
probably

probably prevent him from ever being a groom-porter again ; and had he not been clear in his opinion, as to the trooper's not fighting at all, he would have dispensed with the invitation, and gone to some other.

However, under these contemplations, he at last arrived at the meadow, a stage, where he was to act part of a tragedy, he had not so much as rehearsed ; and there found his adversary alone, and, by the sternness of his countenance, determined to exercise his broad-sword on him in a very military way, and that with so much expedition too, that he did not give our hero time either to invoke his mistress or his saint ; but at once flung away his hat, stripped off his coat and waistcoat, and drew his Andrew Ferrara, a sword that had weight and edge enough to have dissected an ox ; in short, there was no time for parlying, and the combat began without any sort of explanations ; when alas ! to our hero's great dismay, besides his being a confounded strong fellow, he perceived that he was left-handed, which in truth, might have discomfited a much abler prize-fighter than our hero : they took a turn or two, in which there appeared a great deal of revenge on his antagonist's side, and little of either skill or ability on his ; and on the third attack, his antagonist, with his ambo-dexter hand, cut our hero through all the sinews in his arm to the bone, by the violent bleeding of which, he fainted and dropped down ; and after he had revived a little, he found his arm tied up with a stocking, and that the conqueror had fled for the same ; with, it is supposed, an intention, that the surgeon might be sent to him, who soon after made his appearance ;

appearance ; and after a witticism or two on his valour, and the small comfort of its not being impossible but that he might recover, ordered him to be carried home behind one of his brother-troopers, who came mounted thither for that purpose, where he sat without any sense or motion but what he received from the horse, with now and then a lecture from his guide, as “ blood, brother, do not be dismayed, damn it, you will do well enough ; sure enough the left-handed, bloody-minded villain, was too much for you ; but, man, there is no parrying against a flail ; if you live you have done the part of a soldier, and if so be you die, do you see me, why we will give you a volley extraordinary ; and as to what few things you have, you know, brother, I am the last man that takes care of you ; and sure, my boy, thou wouldst not forget my trouble.” But instead of any consolation or assistance from this brotherly advice, he was so weak by the vast effusion of blood, that he did not find himself in a capacity of mind to dispose of his effects at all ; and a fever following the loss of blood, he was not able to leave his bed for six weeks after the rencounter.

And though his cornet visited him every day, and supplied him very plentifully with what was necessary for him, yet as soon as he recovered, he would now and then be very satyrical on the battle, telling him, ‘ That he ought to have had a preparative lesson or two from Hockley in the hole. before he went on the stage, or should have got some instructions from Bates, which might have prevented his making such a scrub figure as he had done in the noble science of defence.’

But

But our hero really had no room to be so merry on the occasion as his cornet was, the consequences of it naturally suggesting to him, how absurd and dangerous it was, to irritate such kind of people, who perhaps may not be easily provoked, but when once they are so, are not to be appeased by any reasonable submission, and whenever successful, are, in general, quite strangers to compassion.

And here, alas ! to compleat his misfortunes, his cornet, who, though he sometimes made a joke of the action, amply rewarded him in regard to what attended it, went some little time after into Kent, and there died of the small-pox : a loss he had reason enough to lament ! not only on account of the many pleasant hours he had spent with him, but the continued acts of friendship he shewed him ; and, as he had a large private fortune, as well as an honourable commission ; he was perfectly generous, always rather inclined to hide a fault in a soldier than discover one, and had so gaining a behaviour, that his troop rather seemed his companions than his soldiers ; he merited the esteem of all mankind, and was a person of so agreeable an address that his company was always acceptable, and his carriage so distinguishably polite, that he was the favourite of the fair sex, and the envy of his own, and died beloved and lamented by all that knew him.

By his death, our hero was reduced to the pay of a trooper only, without any assistance whatsoever, and not being accustomed to so strict an allowance, soon found himself in debt again, and that in a very unlucky hour, for unexpectedly

edly there came an order for the regiment's being reviewed in Hide-Park, before his present majesty, then prince of Wales.

Upon this express, and for fear he should march off without beat of drum, or the trumpet's sounding to horse, he had such a levy of creditors, and so many written demands, that a secretary of state would have had enough to do to have answered them; some of the ingenious authors putting him in mind, "that truly they had trusted him when nobody else would;" others, "that their demand was money lost at gaming;" and couched in the most expressive terms, "how dishonourable it would be to refuse paying it."

Some of them, "that the sum demanded was not above two shillings, and that they had never seen his face after it was due;" others, "that his name was down in chalk indeed, or otherwise they should never have known it, nor had they so much as seen the colour of his money.

But the most untoward demandant of all was his laundress, a stanch, old geneva drinker, such a musical scold, that she exceeded the trumpet on a bonfire night, and always proportioned her levets to her demands.

She proclaimed his want of linen in an instant, and that she not only washed for him without any payment at all, but had dressed him out in every shirt belonging to her husband, who, poor man, though not a trooper, yet she thanked God, by her industry, and his own saving, he could put on a clean shirt every day, swearing with great vehemency, that though he pretended to be a sort of a half-pay gentleman, that he had no more honesty or christianity than the pope of Rome, and

and most devoutly wished that the devil might take him who recruited him.'

But in order to settle these most extraordinary accounts, in a more civil way, he procured as much money the night before he was to march away, as enabled him to drink heartily with the corporal, and clerk of the troop; and by their special command was ordered to march by break of day, with some sick men, lame horses, and baggage-waggons, without the unnecessary formality of taking his leave of either friend or creditor; and afterwards joined the regiment in good health, but very indifferent circumstances, at Colnbrook, within fifteen miles of London, at that time as insolent a town as any in his majesty's dominions, and full of avowed enemies to soldiers of all sorts.

It was on a fair-day when he arrived there, and for the most part of that night he sat up drinking with all sorts of persons, as they occasionally came in his way, and as he came directly from Preston, most of the country people were desirous to hear a narrative of what had happened there, from one that had been present on so extraordinary an occasion; which, according to their genius and principles, had a very different effect on the hearers.

To those on the right side of the question, he took care to magnify the bravery and conduct of his majesty's forces, to the utmost extent; not forgetting, now and then, to throw in some surprising accounts of his own prowess, which produced many a squeeze by the hand, great quantity of liquor, and as many interwoven oaths and blessings as the time would allow, all agreeing that
he

he was the bravest fellow living, and that it was a thousand pities he was not a captain.

But this kind of conversation being sometimes over-heard by those of another kidney, it was attended with, 'Curse on the liar, and that no one ought to believe a word he said, as if all the world did not know who ran for it; to be sure it was not Honeywood's dragoons; the devil a ball was found in their own soldiers backs; Wills had a brave regiment of foot-ball players, and Carpenter came up very early, very early indeed; never mind it, it is all over now, as the saying is; but if somebody had not betrayed somebody, we know whose sides would be blackest:' at the head of whose doctrine, was the landlord inveighing most violently against every paragraph in our hero's gazette, and particularly against the countenance of the publisher.

Some of the troops were to march next day to London, and that which our hero belonged to was ordered to Kensington; where, that he might be sure to be early enough the next day, he slept by the fire-side most part of the night, and at last wakening, he could not perceive that any one else was up in the house; and not liking the situation in which he had slept, he thought it more adviseable to go for an hour or two to bed, but as it was the night of the fair-day, all the beds were taken up, nor did he know in what part of the inn his comrades were disposed.

At last he made shift to crawl up into the first gallery, knocking at every door for admission, which no one thought proper to give him; but in the second gallery he found the door of a room unlocked, in which there was a candle burning,
and

and accordingly in he went, and without any ceremony or questions, to bed to a person he imagined asleep ; but calling to his bed-fellow, and receiving no answer from him, he thought that he might possibly have been one of his company that night, and that his honest friend was not recovered from his fatigue ; but to his great surprize, after having abused him for his silence, he found that it was the corpse of a packhorse-man that he had made choice of for a bedfellow ; and as it was a very busy time, and the deceased not overburdened with affets, he concluded that no care had been taken of his body without them.

In the morning, as soon as he had an opportunity of seeing his landlord, (perhaps as ill-natured a Jacobite as ever was in a plot) our hero told him, that he had lain most part of the night with a dead man ; who immediately replied, ' That it might possibly be so, but that he did not keep a weekly account either of the deaths or burials in that parish, and that it was not improbable but that the deceased might have been robbed too ; and if so, it was not impossible but that he might have been acquainted with the person ; and, in truth, no wonder, for that he and his comrades were just come from plundering and murdering all before them ; and that a poor traveller had but little to expect from such sort of Cannibals.' And as our hero had, in the beginning of the evening, some dispute on account of politics with his landlord, he took that opportunity to shew his resentment ; and accordingly he rode to a neighbouring justice of the peace, whose worship was much of the same kidney with himself, in whose opinion he was, without doubt, a convict upon sight ;
and

and what confirmed him in that opinion was, that as soon as his landlord returned home, our hero was secured by an order of the justice of the peace, and accordingly taken into custody; and notwithstanding all his officers could say or do, he was detained at the very hour when the rest of the regiment was to march; and no sooner was the troop gone, but his landlord, at the head of a rabble-rout of all the disaffected persons in the town, came to view their prisoner, who was locked up in the ostlery, among a parcel of old saddles and bridles, and some halters; which made a very ominous figure on so melancholy an occasion.

Upon the first view of him, it was their unanimous opinion, that he had a blood-thirsty look, and that they could read murder in his countenance; and to tell the truth, the figure he made was none of the best, having on him an old shabby regimental coat, a wig that had not been combed during the whole march, a dirty shirt, and a black crape neckcloth, with a hat near three yards in circumference, cocked in such a manner as would have frightened all the rebels in that part of the world, except those at Colnbrook.

His landlord was the first who saluted him with Cromwellian, presbyterian, republican, robber, and murderer, and would have sent immediately for the coroner, in order for a verdict to that purpose, had not his worship, who very willingly attended there, most discreetly advised the company, that it was better to see first what testimony could be procured against him, before the country was put to the expence of the coroner's attendance; with a cautionary advice, that the coroner was a whig, and that very little could be expected from him

him when a soldier was in question ; with, ‘ Why, gentlemen, you all know how he has argued for a standing army ; how bitter he has been all along against the poor unfortunate gentlemen where this fellow came from, being one of their executioners ; you may remember, gentlemen, what a battle I once had with him, for his swearing that Oliver Cromwell was a brave fellow ; and how narrowly he escaped being committed to the round-house by one of the bench (and a sensible man too, I assure you) for his saying he believed the queen had not been so good as she ought to have been, and the chevalier was a son of a whore : but, gentlemen, testimony, testimony is what we want, and it is heartily to be wished, that the law would allow that he might be tried at a quarter-sessions ; where, people may say what they will, but justice runs in quite another channel than, we all know, it does somewhere else ; but as I have somewhere read, ‘ Verbum sapienti sat est. ’——

As soon as this learned harangue was at an end, they agreed to hold an inquest of their own, at which, as a prelude to one that might afterwards have been held in form, he most certainly would have been found guilty, had it not been for the tapster, who was a boon companion, and one of the principal men in his company that night, and who very honestly swore, that the deceased had complained of being very much indisposed the morning before the troop came there ; and that he attended him, after he was gone to bed, with a pint of warm geneva and pepper, and that he then appeared to be in a dangerous way ; though, truly, being in a hurry, he afterwards quite forgot him ;

him ; and that it was well if he did not die for want of proper care, which he could not, by any means, charge his conscience with ; for, though he was convinced that the deceased had little or no money, he, out of his charity, left a candle burning by him that night.

Upon this circumstantial evidence, it was very learnedly debated, whether any testimony at all ought to be taken against the crown in favour of a murderer ; and that it ought to be considered, and that very well too, whether the tapster might not have been equally guilty in poisoning of him ; and, to do his worship justice, he quoted several cases, very learnedly, out of Scroggs, to shew, that all were principals in murder, except the person that was murdered, whom the books sometimes called a “felo-de-se.” At last, by the interest of his landlady, who had a very great regard for the tapster, and swore what was full enough to corroborate his testimony, they were, it may be said, both acquitted.

Such unheard-of treatment roused up all the law he was master of, and provoked him to swear, that he would bring an action of scandal against the whole town ; or, if it was to be done, hang the master of the house and all his family, except his wife and tapster ; to all which anathemas he got no other answer, than that he, and one of his evidences, ought to have been hanged long enough since, though he was a drawer there in contempt of the landlord.

And being thus cleared by the court, he was left at liberty to walk on foot to Kensington, where his acquittal at Colnbrook was not of any service to him ; for the landlord of the next inn was just
of

of the same complexion with the former, and had been told the whole affair before he came to his house ; and, upon his calling for a mug of ale, directions were given to the drawer not to trust him, for that he looked like a fellow that merited a gibbet better than credit ; from whence, though on so insignificant an occasion, it is easy to observe what treatment is to be expected from party-dissaffection and disloyalty.

The regiment had not been at Kensington above a fortnight, before he was reviewed by his highness then prince of Wales ; and soon after, orders were given that ten of the youngest additional men should be broke ; one of whom was our hero, and he was accordingly discharged ; to each of the reduced men were given their regimental cloaths, boots, and cloaks, with a viaticum of forty shillings ; which, in regard to him, was all the stock he had to travel with over great part of Europe afterwards.

Within a day or two after our hero was reduced, he marched with the rest of his disbanded brethren to London, the general rendezvous of such sort of unfortunate youths ; where he was continually haunted with the shocking reflexions of what a poor condition he had brought himself into ; and though he saw many of his contemporaries in a flourishing condition, yet he was ashamed, on account of his present circumstances and dress, to make himself known to any of them ; in short, he was under all the confusion it is possible to express, and as he knew that London was, of all places in the world, the most dangerous and relentless situation, for idle or incautious persons to have resort to, he determined
to

to go abroad with any person, on any account, or to any place whatsoever.

This was in the year 1718, at which time a secret expedition was agreed on against Vigo ; and on that enterprize were sent four men of war, two fire-ships, and two bomb-catches, and between four and five thousand men, under the commands of general Cobham and admiral Myles.

Our hero thought this a proper opportunity, at least, of secreting himself from the view and contempt of his own countrymen, being, by degrees, driven to so deplorable a condition, as not to have so much as a bed to lie on, unless at the discretion of an invalid at Chelsea college, of which Col. Chudleigh was then governor, and his regiment ordered on that expedition ; and, in order to his being one of the adventurers, he was pitched on by a serjeant of Col. Chudleigh's regiment for that purpose ; a serjeant of great sagacity and address, who let him know, ' That he thought him a well-made fellow enough, of a proper size, and fit to serve his majesty king George ; that his honour the colonel, and all the rest of the officers of his regiment, were the best-natured men living, so fond of a soldier, that it was hardly ever known that a man in it was ever punished ; and if that young fellows had a mind to make their fortunes, now was the time ; that he would lay his halbert to a pinch of snuff, that every man that went to Vigo, and came off but with flying colours, might bring home with him five hundred yellow-boys ; and that if he would make one of the adventurers, he should have a couple of them in his fist ; and, my honest lad, as you seem to have a
good

good sensible knack at talking, and I suppose can read and write, perhaps you may be advanced to the honour of an halberts before you go on the expedition.'

Our hero did not by any means want inducements to his preferment, being full as willing to go as the serjeant was to persuade him to it; and, accordingly, without putting him to the trouble of much more of his military rhetoric, drank his full proportion of a dozen hot-pots, got in hand the picture of his late majesty king George, in a piece of silver instead of gold, value five shillings sterling, and listed in Col. Chudleigh's regiment of foot; but could never bring the noble serjeant to any other account for the remainder of the two guineas, than that he was ordered to secure it, as a deposit for his not deserting.

There were a great many other recruits, who, as soon as their indentures were signed, sealed, and delivered, were ordered, on the penalty of being taken up as deserters, not to stir from their quarters at Chelsea, without the permission of the serjeant, corporal, or his launspassade, which was never granted, unless at the expence of some of the lifting money.

But as bad as his case was, he could not help laughing, now and then, at the mottled figure he and his comrades made; an united company of taylors, shoe-makers, drawers, chimney-sweepers, hackney-clerks, coachmen, and pickpockets; and, without any manner of doubt, half a dozen poets, all putting in for the Spanish plate, and all as ragged as an old mop; and what he had the most implacable aversion to, was a large yellow and blue cockade, which he was obliged to wear.

on an old brown coloured hat, not worth two pence, saving, at all times, its cockade.

With this cavalcade he marched, in some little time, to the Isle of Wight, being the place appointed for the rendezvous, and embarking the troops destined for that expedition.

It was in captain Gaddis's company in which he had list'd, who, though he formerly had been his acquaintance, knew nothing of it till his arrival there; and, as soon as he saw him, let him know that he was greatly surpris'd to find him in such company and circumstances, and, giving him a guinea, told him he would recommend him to his brother officers, and serve him as far as it lay in his power; not in regard only as he had been his acquaintance, but on account of the report he had heard, of his father's having disposed of his employment at Barbadoes, without his knowledge or consent.

The troops lay encamped in the Isle of Wight about a fortnight, expecting their compliment from Ireland; but from the entertainment, usage, and wet weather, he fell ill of a flux, and was sent on board the hospital-ship that attended the embarkation, where he had more physic than meat, and more gruel than any other sort of drink; two of the most diabolical preparations that could be ministered to an half-starved recruit; but had a fine opportunity of learning to be an undertaker, at very little trouble or expence, by seeing half a dozen of his brother-soldiers carcases, for expedition sake, thrown over board at once; and that too before they had time to be quite cold.

After a passage of eight days, the men of war and transport vessels anchored in the harbour of
Vigo,

Vigo, it being Michaelmas-day; and before the men could be disembarked, it was easy to see the inhabitants running away with their goods, in the utmost confusion, from the town: in the evening, after firing as many ship-guns, and small arms, as might reasonably have terrified the whole province, the forces were landed with very little opposition, except from the cannon of the castle, which did no great execution.

It was there our hero had the favour of seeing Nathaniel Bland, Esq; who was then an ensign of foot, but since has most judiciously put in practice the command of *'cedant arma togæ;'* in plain English, of changing his half-pike into a gown; though in either dress the doctor, doubtless, would have made an eminent figure.

The men lay in a vineyard on their arms all that night; and about a mile's distance from the place of their being landed there was a small village, into which a great many of the grenadier-guards had got, and set it on fire, notwithstanding orders were given, on pain of death, not to leave the vineyard that night; and among the rest of marauders, our hero sallied out on that expedition.

In the village there was a great quantity of wine, ready for exportation; and when he came there, he found the soldiers excessively drunk, and firing promiscuously on one another; they had invented a new and very expeditious way of broaching the pipes of wine, by firing musket-balls into them; so that in some of the wine-houses, they were up to their knees in liquor, designed for a much better use than wading in.

However he followed their example, and having drank most plentifully, which, as he remem-

bered, it was customary to do among his friends, he thought it might not be unnecessary to do among his enemies ; and so heartily did he perform that ceremony, that I have heard him say, that he had not much more understanding left than what was necessary for plundering ; though all the booty he got was some poultry, which were roosted in an olive tree, and most incautiously betrayed by the cock, who mistook the light of the fires for that of the morning.

These fowl he took prisoners of war, and killed them without any quarter at all ; but to shew how inhumanity is often punished, even on the most trifling occasions, he, on his return towards the camp, was overtaken by some of the drunken grenadier-guards, who, without the least regard to an humble soldier of a marching regiment, knocked him down with the but-end of a firelock, beat him in a most unbrotherly way, and took possession of his forage without so much as leaving him a feather ; and, what was worst of all, robbed him of his tin-flask, and the contents thereof : this disorder, and beating, together with the loss of all the comfort he then had in the world, his flask, made him imagine that he had embarked in a very dangerous sort of a voyage ; and that he had not his enemies only, but his fellow-travellers to guard against, and who, though they had suffered him to escape with his life, yet had killed and wounded a great many others, who had been on the same errand with themselves : at last, amidst an hundred shots, he made shift to limp to the camp in a most woeful pickle, one of his eyes almost knocked out, a contusion in his nose, his regimental coat taken from him, and his
hat

hat and wig, with the small caption he had made, eloined ; against which no Withernam could lie.

The next morning every regiment was drawn out, out of which there were above fifty men wanting, some killed, and others wounded ; and such as survived from the conflagration, would not have escaped unpunished, but that in the beginning of a battle, the officers are brothers to every foldier under their command ; lucky enough for our hero, who among the rest of the marauders, must otherwise have had the insignia of desertion imprinted very legibly on his back.

However, neither the ill usage, or bad success he got in the first onset, could deter him from an attempt of the same nature again ; for, as soon as it was duskish the next evening, notwithstanding his wounds, he, with two others, left the camp, which was then pitched in form, and strolled further into the country, attacking and searching every house in their way, most of which were entirely deserted ; so that they kept marching on till they had got so far as to be entirely out of their knowledge whereabouts the camp lay.

At length, they got into a very large house, which had been partly ransacked by some other industrious hands ; but upon searching very narrowly, they found an oven in it, very closely stopped up with ashes, and was the repository of two linen bags full of double-reals of plate, of the value of about thirty pounds of our coin, with two hogskins of wine, and a couple of very fine setting-dogs, lying not very far from it : with this booty, he and his companions walked

off indifferently well satisfied, as to their plunder, but under terrible apprehensions of being punished for a second breach of orders; having been absent much longer than they allowed themselves for plundering, and as far out of their knowledge of the place where the camp lay, as if they had been in the desarts of Arabia: but as they were making towards it, according to the best observation they could make of its latitude, the uneasiness they were under about getting to it, and the trouble of their marching was soon at an end; for they were intercepted by seven Spaniards, who lay in ambuscade to make prisoners of all sorts of stragglers; and being armed with guns, to which there were match-locks only, they pointed them directly at our hero and his companions, and shot one of them dead on the spot. Upon which our hero and the other, being in their waistcoats, and without any other weapon than their bayonets, endeavoured to make their escape; but being unacquainted with the difficulties of traversing a vineyard, after two or three falls, our hero was knocked down and taken prisoner, having his head broke in several places; a salutation not significant enough to shew their way of making strangers welcome, but they immediately tyed his hands behind him, stripped him of his waistcoat, shirt, shoes, and stockings; and as he was entirely unacquainted with the deformity of a Spanish countenance, especially that horrid part of it, their whiskers, he took them rather to be man-eaters than Roman catholics; and accordingly expected, that they would have feasted on him instantler.

His

His other companion who carried off the money, it is supposed was an Highlander; for, by his great agility of body, he out-stripped the whole pack, and by the rules of transmigration, might formerly have been an hare; and they who pursued him, returning without their prize, revenged their disappointment on our hero, by bastinadoing him with a club, which by the weight of it, must have been a cousin-german to that of Hercules. From thence, in a gore of blood, they drove him bare-foot to an house about a league from the vineyard; where, though he had received the special favour of not being devoured, he expected to have been hanged without further ceremony; but being allowed stay of execution, he found afterwards, that it was occasioned by the directions they had received, to bring all stragglers they could pick up, into the castle of Vigo, in order to incorporate them into the Spanish service; and accordingly, in this forlorn condition, with his feet burned by the sands, he was conducted thither by such a set of aid de camps, as were not to be matched in the service of Lucifer.

When he first came into the castle, he was dragged into one of their guard-rooms among such a pack of shabby, lifeless-coloured miscreants, as hardly ever sat on a consultation of murder; some dressing their wounds, others lying flat on their bellies at prayers, others at dinner on bread and garlick, and some playing on jews-trumps; but all of them, at the sight of a bomb, great numbers of which were then flying incessantly from the camp, crying out, Holy Mary! a bomb! a bomb! imploring her particular assistance,

ance, without application to any other help or power whatsoever : as he passed along to the castle, he could perceive, that they had drove a great number of peasants into it, with abundance of cows and sheep, but believed, that not above three hundred of their regular troops, were there at that time, gunners included.

From the guard room, where doubtless he got as many curses as there were ave maria's, he was conducted to the governor's, whom he took to be a Frenchman, by the volubility of his tongue, and the agitation of his head and hands, together with some little humanity, unknown to a Spaniard ; and his excellency ordered an Irishman, who was one of the gunners, to attend as interpreter.

He examined our hero in regard to the number of ships, and what troops were on board of them, and particularly where they were destined to, with their quantity of ammunition and stores ; in regard to which, he could give him no exact answer, nor any other account, than what was the general report of the number of the men.

As soon as the governor had made what other inquiries he thought necessary, the gunner, whose name was Murphy, told him, that he need not be under any uneasiness ; for if he would take on in the king of Spain's service, he should be taken care of, and sent into a part of the country, where a regiment was raising for the duke of Ormond, who was then at Lugo, not many leagues from the castle ; and that billets had been dispersed in the English camp, to that purpose ; in which, as a further inducement to desertion,
four

four pistoles had been promised to all such honest fellows as would make their escape.

Though our hero had not got much by his majesty's service, yet he was so faithfully attached to him, that nothing could voluntarily have induced him from that into any other service upon earth, but particularly into one that had nothing but the appearance of rags and poverty; and, miserable as he was, he had resolution enough to tell Mr. Murphy so.

Upon which he left him very abruptly, and as soon as he had done so, he was conducted to the parade, and there left sitting with only his breeches on, amidst a shower of bombs, that did terrible execution the whole night; and one of the powder magazines, which was but at a very little distance from where he sat, blew up, and occasioned such a catastrophe as would shock human nature to read: in this condition he applied the pitcher well all night, which, to do the gunner all possible justice, he sent properly filled to him, though he had peremptorily refused to list: he has often told me, that at first he was in some terror, but that by the assistance of the jug, the apprehension of the bombs, and all other trifling accidents that attend a siege, were surprisingly abated; and though he was at that time warm enough, yet towards morning he got an additional piece of cloathing, which was the most part of a Spaniard's cloak, who was knocked on the head just by him.

The gunner, after leaving our hero in this situation for some time, thought that perhaps the goodness of the wine might have abated the resentment and aversion he had to listing, and paid

him a second visit, telling him 'how good a service that of the Spaniards was, especially that of the horse, in a regiment too that was to be commanded by no less a general than the duke of Ormond; assuring him, that to his certain knowledge, orders were given, that their regimental cloathing should be laced, and, in honour to the duke, were to be scarlet turned up with blue; that as he had confessed himself to be an Englishman, no doubt but he was a protestant; but be that as it would, the duke did not trouble himself about religion at all, and for what he could hear, no one could tell whether he was a protestant or a Roman, so that he might be easy as to that matter; but in regard to his getting the good will or the rest of the officers, upon his honour, if he would turn catholic, he might depend on being advanced in a very few months; and for the Lord's sake, pray, brother soldier now, who would want a shoulder-knot for the difference there is in any religion? you see as how I am a gunner, and a Roman catholic into the bargain, and yet I defy any man to say, that he ever caught me at a pater-noster or ave mary, for seven years before these cursed bombs put me in mind of them; and as for king Philip, king George, or king any body, I would always fight for him that pays best.'

But here the gunner was quite out of his politics, for the wine had a different operation on him, and the more he drank the stauncher he was, in both his religion and loyalty; though in truth he did not perceive much idolatry in popish wine; and, at last, not only very contemptuously refused to list, but cursed the king of Spain, and wished

wished the pope, the pretender, and all his adherents, jointly and severally at the devil.

This sort of treatment, as well it might, enraged the governor beyond all measure, not only as it was contrary to the rules of good behaviour, but the highest piece of insolence from one, whose life was in his power; so that he immediately sent for a serjeant of the militia, who tied his hands behind him, with so much severity, that the blood burst out from one of his wrists; and under a detachment of these ruffians, he was sent to Pontevedro, about six leagues from Vigo, and was there laid in gaol that night, without any manner of subsistence whatsoever; and the next morning was escorted by the same retinue to St. Jago, where he was again committed to prison, and one of his feet locked in the stocks, as a security for the other; where he had not been long, before he heard that general Cobham had laid Pontevedro under contribution, and returned to England with an immense booty.

The escape he had from the persons who took him prisoner, and what might reasonably have been thought inevitable death, amidst a thousand bombs, struck the deepest impressions on his mind; and he told me, has confirmed him in opinion, that the hand of providence interests itself even in the minutest incidents of life, and though not a predestinarian, firmly believes, that the hour and manner when and where every man shall take his farewell of this life, is irrevocably decreed.

During his march to St. Jago, the peasants goaded him in the most inhuman manner, and had it not been for part of the lining of his
E 6 breeches,

breeches, which he cut out, and bound about his feet, he would never have been able to have reached it, the heat of the sands for want of shoes, burning them so intolerably.

Within a few days after his arrival there, without getting any sort of provision on the road, except now and then a piece of the worst sort of bread it is possible to conceive, he was thrust into a dungeon, full of all manner of vermin and filth, and both his feet into a pair of stocks, which was all the furniture he saw in his apartment; and the cause of this additional punishment he found afterwards was, on account of his being an heretic, which some of the prisoners alledged against him, on their taking notice that he never made use of a crucifix nor a rosary; which, though at that time he through ignorance neglected, he afterwards made a proper use of.

This imprisonment, which was the beginning of a course of unspeakable misery, which he afterwards went through, sat very ill on him, and being unacquainted with distresses of so deep a complexion, he despaired of ever seeing an end of them; and in bitterness of reflexion, began to consider what opportunities he had lost, not only of living in a comfortable way, but in a very genteel one, and such was the change! that from all the plenty, mirth, and gaiety his own country had once afforded him, he was now reduced to be half starved, in that of a most relentless and inhuman enemy; in a prison, where he was distracted by day, and by means of the bugs and musketto's (insects that are enemies even to weariness and want) without sleep all night.

At some times he got bread and water, and at others, none; quite shut up from all manner of charity,

charity, unless what now and then proceeded from the humanity of the gaoler's wife, which consisted in a little boiled cabbage and oil, on Sundays; and to add to the rest of his afflictions, he was abused by every one that visited the cell, with the constant appellations of English Heretic, and Jew: though had he then been as well acquainted with the great esteem that nation had for Ireland, as he afterwards found was the case, (it being their general belief that there are none, at least very few protestants in it) it is thought he would have finessed a little as to his country.

In this unfortunate condition, our hero continued about twenty weeks, unless that in about three months, there was a notorious robber sent as a companion to him, from whom he received some assistance; with this man, whose name was Ferdinando Gavanna, he had the honour of setting in durance, in the same machine: Ferdinando was by birth a Catalan, and as in that province, great numbers are up in arms against their sovereign, he had been so for many years, and in that time had robbed and murdered a great number of people; and was then apprehended for killing a Spanish officer, who had pursued him from the mountains of Catalonia into Galicia.

When don Ferdinando was first made our hero's companion in the stocks, he looked on him with the utmost scorn and contempt, and thought it no inconsiderable increase of his punishment to be in the same condition with so forlorn a wretch; and hearing that he was an heretic, a crime of much worse a nature than what his companion was charged with, he, without the least regard to fellowship in misfortunes, refused all manner of intercourse

tercourse or conversation with him ; though if he had descended so low, our hero was not able to understand him to any sort of perfection, but by means of some latin books, Gavanna was supplied with by some of the priests who attended him : books applicable to his spiritual edification, and of vast energy towards supplying the wants of those who had the privilege of explaining them : by these books our hero became better acquainted with him, for by his reading them aloud, Gavanna found he understood the language they were wrote in, and by degrees they began to converse together in it ; lucky enough for one who stood in so much need of any language or conversation that could procure him a dinner ; which, to the immortal memory and honour of his school-master, his instructions then, and many time afterwards, had very plentifully done.

In a very little time, our hero, there being a great affinity between the latin and Spanish tongue, began to understand the latter, and to converse tolerably well with Ferdinando in it, whose pupil he was in the exercise of the beads and cross ; and got very learned instructions from him, in regard to the tenets of his religion, which till then he was quite a stranger to : and accordingly the infamy and scandal of being an heretic began to abate, and from thence-forward, he got many a catholick belly-full, from perhaps a greater rogue than any among the Mahometans ; though, to do him justice, he was a very sensible man, and what might be called, in that country, a good scholar ; but his highest perfection was, that he never wanted good store of provision in prison ; a large share of which our hero got, after

ter their correspondence was so amicably settled ; his comrade's stomach, as well as his mind being much indisposed ; and, by degrees, Ferdinando's confidence in him began to be so great, that he let him into the secret of his intending to make his escape ; which it was almost impossible but he must have been in some manner privy to, as the scheme of bringing it about, by their being so nearly confined together, was sometimes planned in his hearing ; nor was the liberty of his being more private always to be had, from the capricious and unsatisfiable temper of the gaoler. And as a prelude to the discovery before-mentioned, Ferdinando had art enough to tell our hero, " that a tame and low submission to imprisonment was one of the meanest acts any one could be guilty of ; that a sense of liberty was imprinted in the breasts of even beasts themselves ; that a cage was more terrible to a lion than all the dogs in Africa ; and that by neglecting to obtain our freedom, we tacitly allowed that we deserved to want it ; and that he suffered almost as much on our hero's account as he did on his own, by being a witness to his continuing in bonds and Shackles, when perhaps he might be instrumental in shaking them off."

After some other intimations of the like nature, Ferdinando told him, that if his intentions could be brought to bear, money should not be wanting for both their uses ; and, as an earnest of what our hero was to expect, he gave him four double reals of plate, of about five shillings value ; and, indeed it had not escaped our hero's observation, that his contrivance was not far from execution ; for the gaoler, who on other occasions, was one
of

of the greatest brutes living, now appeared to be of another complexion; by often giving him the liberty of the upper part of the prison, and suffering a much freer access to him than usual, in the stocks.

It is very natural to suppose, that our hero would readily have joined his fellow-prisoner in so laudable an attempt, and willing enough he was to have done so; but he had some very pungent scruples in regard to their want of success, apprehending too, that as Ferdinando was a notorious murderer, and he himself confined for no other damnable sin but heresy, and marauding, the perquisite of every gentleman-soldier; yet, if he should be retaken, his punishment, in all probability, would be the same with his companion; and, on that account, exchange his seat of durance, for a place on the gallows; a very ugly sort of reward for his confederacy; and so, very prudently determined to stay where he was, though he did not think proper to acquaint him with his scruples; and accordingly was still continued as a trustee, in all Ferdinando's designs.

At the head of this cabal there was a notary-public, a fellow who could out-plot the Devil; and was so ambiguous and artful in his advice, that at the very time you might imagine that he was demanding your assent, he was, in reality, forbidding you to give it; one that had the name of Judas wrote in capitals in his face.

This most extraordinary scribe, was cash-keeper, spy, and trustee for the prisoner; who, as soon as he had got all the money that was to be advanced for his escape, laid an imbargo on his person and effects, and discovered the whole plot;
by

by which our hero lost his providore much sooner than he either apprehended or wished, signior don Ferdinando Gavanna being, upon the notary's information, sent to Barcelona, under the guard of a party of a swiss regiment then on duty at St. Jago, where he was soon after hanged and gibbeted; nor would our hero have escaped the like fate, had he been master of money enough to have procured it, by a sufficient deposit in the notary-public's hands; but the want of money in this particular was as serviceable to him as it was afterwards destructive; founded entirely on the notary's judicious way of thinking, that it was not worth his while to hang his friend for nothing.

When his yoke-fellow was taken from St. Jago gaol, he left our hero an old waistcoat, a cap, and a pair of stockings, and about ten pence in money; the last of which he imagined to be a bribe, in regard to the future exercise of his beads; which, though his fellow-prisoner perhaps at that time did not apprehend it, he had more immediate occasion for than himself; though he had told him, 'that if he was to suffer death, he had paid and commuted for absolution with those who had the power of granting it; and that his conscience was quite at ease, in regard to his offences, which were expunged by the gentleman our hero might observe to have been his confessor; and that he forgave all the world, except the villain who had betrayed him in regard to his escape; swearing heartily, that although he was obliged to forget him in this world, he would never forgive him in the next.'

He

He bid him be sure to continue and die a Roman Catholic, to which religion he very erroneously thought he had the merit of making him a proselyte; but that sort of imbargo on his conscience was soon taken off, and must have made way for a truly protestant lent, had it not been for some other company, that came very opportunely to gaol, towards his relief: for in some few weeks after his comrade had been disposed of according to law, some of the pretended recruiting officers for the duke of Ormond's regiment before-mentioned, had picked up at Vigo, and about it, some deserters, and a great many prisoners, from the English camp, and sent them with one captain O Bryan to St. Jago; but some of the prisoners, having attempted to make their escape on the march, were retaken, and as soon as they arrived at St. Jago, were committed to that gaol, where our hero still continued a prisoner; though he did not remember any of their faces.

They gave him an account of all the transactions that happened at Vigo, after he left it; and, as their brother-sufferer, gave him part of their provisions and pay; and upon their being forgiven and discharged from gaol, they persuaded him it was better to list, as they had done, though against their inclinations, and wait for an opportunity of getting away, than to lie in such a miserable gaol as he had so long done, and still was likely to do, without the least hope of being released upon any other terms; which, with great reluctance, he at last did, merely for the preservation of his life, and a view of his being discharged from gaol.

St.

St. Jago, or St. James's, is a capital city of the province of Galicia, one of the poorest in all Spain, though agreeably situated, and has in it the best and most remarkable college in all that kingdom; it abounds likewise with knights of the order of St. James, whose body they affirm is deposited there in the cathedral church of that name, under the high altar, in a silver coffin; which they expose at certain times, gratis, to public view, and at others, when they are paid for so doing: it is at this town that pilgrims of all countries and nations, get their credentials and admittance into that most extraordinary function, who at the time of their admission, performed several very unaccountable ceremonies, such as fastening scraps of rags torn from the cloaths they had on them, to an iron crucifix, kissing the figure of that saint, and putting their hats or bonnets on his head, to which they afterwards fixed a great many cockle-shells and little images of that saint made of lead; and after they have received them with a proper benediction annexed, walked off, fully satisfied of the efficacy and effect they would afterwards have on all good christians.

Here they have an hospital on purpose for those sort of mendicants, who are allowed eleemosynary entertainment, for three days only; and though they are so closely circumscribed, there is hardly a sect in the world that has so many proselytes on so poor a foundation.

In St. Jago's church, which is the richest and most splendid church in the province of Galicia, is a very large and tall crucifix, to which great adoration is paid; it stands exactly in the center
of

of the church, under an exceeding large bell; this crucifix, they confidently affirm, bows on its own accord, on certain festival days, annually; at which infinite crouds attend to pay their devotion, and, and among the rest of the devotees, he has told me, that he had been several times present; but could not be so truly pious, as to conclude that it was done by a supernatural motion of the crucifix; but was plainly occasioned by its being placed exactly under the bell, which being raised on these occasions to its utmost height, the air was so strongly vibrated as to cause a very perceptible waving motion in the crucifix; in which the whole miracle consisted: and whatever awe or reverence it might extort from the common people, he could not imagine, that they of a better understanding could have any confidence in the truth of it.

The reader would not have been troubled with this account had it not been for the novelty of it, and its being so odd a piece of superstition; the editor's intention being to give an account of what happened to his hero, and not a description or history of the country.

Our hero being prevailed on to list into the Spanish service, on the motives before-mentioned, a corporal came to him in the morning, before he was discharged from prison, with a flannel frock, a shirt, a frize bonnet, a pair of stockings and sandals made of hemp, in the shape of a pair of slippers; the corporal was very voluminous in regard to the excellency of the regiment, and very plausibly excused the badness of the equipage he had brought with him at that time, an account of their not being at present furnished with
money,

money, nor their regimental cloathing arrived from Madrid; where it was making after the best manner, in order to their being distinguished from the rest of the regiments; with a noble duke their colonel, every officer a count, and every private centinel a gentleman.

This same want of money and cloaths, his unfortunate brethren in gaol had informed him of; adding, that what troops had been raised, would soon be reduced with infamy, and by that means be an inlet for their getting home sooner than otherwise; for that some of the pretended officers had not a rag to their backs; and that their whole baggage was carried in a deer-skin, which the united stock of their linen was not sufficient to fill; reasons sufficient enough to deter any one from lifting, who was not in hopes of being soon reduced.

At this time our hero was grown very thin and weak, and his beard of a great length, which he cut off, except what would serve for whiskers; which are worn, 'in terrorem,' by all the troops in Spain. And in this flannel dress, he was introduced to the rest of the recruits, who were about an hundred and fifty; great part of them almost naked, half-starved and pennyless; and surely no figure in nature could be more the reverse of a soldier than what he made; his face was not much broader than a queen Elizabeth's shilling, and his bonnet fell quite over his nose, so that very little of that part of him could be seen, but his mouth and a pair of whiskers; his flannel frock had a terrible resemblance of a shroud, what part of his breeches was left, was past all mending, and as to his sandals, he could neither
walk

walk with them nor without them ; for his enchanted feet were so swelled by their confinement in the stocks, that he had almost lost the use of them.

This naturally gave him a very wishful retrospect to his old colonel's regiment of horse, and his lamented cornet ; and upon reflecting on the figure he made, he would have chose to have stood a shot or two at Preston, been tried for killing a dead man, or have fought another left-handed prize, rather than have appeared in the dress he was in for half an hour.

In this trim he was quartered in the suburbs of St. Jago near five months, when orders came for their marching to join the rest of the ragged levies at Lugo, the place of their rendezvous ; and sure such a rabble-rout of contemptible animals, till then, never marched together ; some without hats, others without shirts or shoes, or any covering at all, unless a piece of a blanket ; and the military chest, belonging to the whole party, not exceeding twenty shillings sterling.

Nor were those they joined at Lugo in a better condition, where the muster-roll amounted to about three hundred (it may be truly said) ineffective men ; a great many of whom, he was informed, were those who were called the Wild Geese, and had been trappanned into that service by some Spanish officers sent into Ireland for that purpose.

When our hero listed, it was into the horse-service, and his pay was to be a real of plate a day, value about seven pence half-penny, till the regiment was mounted ; and while he continued at St. Jago it was paid him, but as soon as he got to Lugo,

Lugo, his subsistance was reduced to two pence three farthings a day, and a pound and a quarter of ammunition bread, the blackest and worst that was ever eaten ; for that part of Spain produces very little of other sort of corn-bread than Maiis, a kind of Indian wheat, which, when the bread made of it is kept four and twenty hours, it turns yellow, and becomes both sour and bitter ; and if there is any thing eatable there it is goats milk, chesnuts, or turnips, with the last of which the inhabitants fatten their hogs, in which they abound to such a degree, that in a morning and evening you may see two or three hundred of them following their herdsman's horn, into and out of the woods ; where, at a proper season of the year, they are fed on either acorns or chesnuts ; and our hero told me, that the first time he saw them and their driver, the whole breed of them being black, they put him in mind of their brethren the swine, which ran violently down a steep hill, possessed by a legion of devils.

At their first coming to Lugo, the men had the liberty of the gates, and were suffered to go out of the town, as often as they thought convenient ; but a great many, who were made prisoners of war, deserting, that freedom was soon taken from them ; and such was their severity on that occasion, that they who were retaken were whipped in a most unmerciful manner twice a day, by which several of them died in exquisite misery.

On account of these desertions, they who were most confided in, and of course promised commissions, were every day placed centinels at the town-gates ; and as soon as it was sun-set, the rest of

them were obliged to retire by beat of drum into the barracks, such as they were, being some old shattered houses, in which chopped straw only was allowed them to lie on, without any covering whatsoever ; one squadron of them was locked up every night in five of these houses, and there remained, without any back yard or place to retire to, let the occasion be what it would, till the person, who kept the keys, thought proper to let them out ; and the rest of the men, among whom was our hero, were shut up in the common gaol, though, in truth, not in a much worse barrack than the rest of them.

The chief part of their diet was garlic, pounded into a sort of butter and spread on bread, four goat's milk, and lard made of it, which, being put into sheep-bladders, afforded a most odoriferous smell, and frequently produced insects of a most extraordinary nature ; they sometimes made a soup compounded of turnips and meal, and some of that sort of butter ; somewhat inferior indeed to a Frenchman's Soup d'Onion ; at other times they regaled on frogs, which are sold there by dozens on strings, to such as are not willing or nimble enough to catch them ; a branch of trade in which our hero, by degrees, made no inconsiderable figure.

At this place there was likewise the representation of a butcher's shambles, where sometimes was sold old cow-beef, poor and dry, and almost black ; and some mutton not altogether of so bad a sort ; but this kind of diet, the price of it being a groat a pound, very seldom fell to our hero's lot.

At

At these shambles, two of their justices of the peace, or alcadees, gave constant attendance on seats built on purpose for them, to determine complaints arising between the buyers and sellers; for the butcher obliges his customers to take some liver, lights, or bone, with the meat he sells, let the quantity be ever so small; so that their workshops are employed in an office, one would imagine, quite derogatory to their honour; and very droll consequences have happened within the memory of man on these sort of tryals, attended with many a broken head and bloody nose, about a piece of liver, not half a breakfast for an English cat, ending sometimes in the entire subversion of the stalls, and precipitate flight of their justices of the peace.

They had not been very long at those quarters before the men, who were cantoned in the gaol, very narrowly escaped being burned to death by the inhabitants of the town, who set the prison on fire on the following account.

There was a priest, who had been excommunicated for some notorious offence, and for fear of being apprehended for it had sheltered himself in the mountains about a mile from Lugo; the ecclesiastical officers, who pursued him, being informed that he was either in or about the town, demanded of their reputed lieutenant-colonel, whose name was Sherlock, a military assistance: his honour, to shew his readiness to command on any expedition whatsoever, without considering his want of a regular commission, or the consequences of a parcel of such poor wretches as they were, attempting to execute any orders against a priest, ordered a party of thirty of them to sur-

F

round

round the house, where the information had been given that the clergyman lay concealed ; and there took and brought him prisoner to the gaol of Lugo.

Within a few days after his imprisonment, some of his friends irritated a great number of the scholars and others, to force him out of prison, telling the inhabitants, that those who had taken him prisoner were heretics and vagabonds (the last of which accusations was not a jot beyond the truth) and that their officers were a pack of non-commissioned robbers, and by no ways impowered to imprison any one, much less so good a man as a priest, whose very gown, in other parts of the world, was a sanction against such outrages.

Upon this proclamation and encouragement, great numbers of them in the dead time of the night, with torches in their hands, and well armed, came to the gaol door, and threatening those within with fire and sword, demanded that the priest should be set at liberty.

There was an iron grate in the middle of the prison door, at which, while one of their sergeants was parlying with those on the other side of it, he was run through the body, and dropped down dead on the spot ; upon which several shots were fired into the gaol-yard, and, at length, by the assailants flinging two or three hand-granades, into the upper part of the prison, it was set on fire ; notwithstanding which, neither the gaoler, nor any one else belonging to him, was suffered to go out ; with a view to the preservation of those who were his unfortunate companions, and to whom he absolutely refused the keys so long, that

at last he was killed by some of the prisoners who were confined for debt ; and his body, and that of his wife who was crushed to death by the fall of a beam, dragged into the yard, and there laid, that their death might pass as an act of the assailants ; upon which the door was opened, and the priest turned out ; all the prisoners below escaping at the same time with him, together with some of the regiment, who never being afterwards heard of, the rest concluded that they were murdered ; as doubtless they were.

Five of our hero's miserable companions were smothered before the door of the gaol was opened, which was at length burned to the ground.

The horror they were in on this occasion can never be sufficiently expressed, there being a room full above stairs of such as, when they thought themselves beyond hopes of escaping, determined to kill themselves before the flames could reach them ; which they agreed to do alternatively, with a sword that belonged to the serjeant who was murdered, the gaoler's arms, which they contemplated as a more expeditious way of execution, being all unloaded ; in which terrible circumstances, a poor woman, who had been a servant to the gaoler, on the cries of her child, upon an extraordinary burst of the fire, strangled him with her own hands, and her own life, by some means or other, was soon after put an end to.

They continued above twelve months in the same condition, as to cloathing and confinement, without any supply whatsoever, unless now and then a pair of hempen breeches, and shirts of the same manufacture, for such as were too visibly naked, expecting to be massa-

cred every day ; the antipathy which the inhabitants had taken against them, being on no account to be satisfied, nor any resentment sufficient against such as had been instrumental in apprehending the priest.

At last, instead of being formed into a regiment of horse, our hero and his comrades were delivered over as recruits to some officers of Castillar's Irish regiment of foot, who were very badly clothed and paid, but sent to Lugo for that purpose.

By these officers they were in some manner provided with half-mountings, before they left their old quarters ; which, I have been informed, no persons in purgatory could more readily do, were the punishments there as terrible as they are represented to be, having been used worse than Algerine slaves, at the discretion of the inhabitants of Lugo ; and after they had left them, put into the hands of Castillar's officers, who made a most pitiful appearance ; and marched them off very little better equipped than themselves, and probably not with much more money ; their want of baggage was, at least, evident ; for they had neither horse, mule, carr, or knapsack in the whole party ; and all the sumptuous apparatus visible was an ass with a straw pack-saddle, on which an imaginary lieutenant rode, who had been extremely unfortunate in his amours, bawling out to the driver of the beast, for the love of the Holy Virgin to march easily, though his charger was not able to exceed a mile in an hour : it is true, they received their pay, not from their officers, but from the inhabitants of such towns as they halted at, too much or too extensive credit never being

being allowed to the subalterns in his most catholic majesty's service : in short, they received two pence three farthings a day, being the subsistence, and, in truth, the full pay of every gentleman foot-soldier in that most extraordinary service.

On their march they were quartered on the peasants, by whom they were provided with kidney-beans, cabbage, garlic, and red pepper, mixed and boiled together ; an olio which, till necessity brought our hero acquainted with it, continued but a very little time in his stomach, nor indeed has he been extravagantly fond of any sort of soup since.

The beds with which they were provided were bags filled with chopped barley-straw, with only a blanket over them, and many a time, as a preservative against such sort of feathers, did he most ardently wish for one under him : by the acquaintance which some of the men had made with those of Castillar's regiment (who were the most notorious thieves in the world) and the leisure they had to improve their own genius, they behaved very huffar-like on the road, and seldom left a stray shirt, sheet, or pullet, behind them for want of a convoy ; and although they left Lugo, incumbered with a very small weight of baggage, yet some of them were very comfortably loaded when they arrived at Rodrigo ; and, to do justice to the industry and diligence of several of their pretended officers, they likewise were mightily improved in their stock of linnen.

There happened a very unfortunate skirmish at the latter end of their march, occasioned by a drummer's taking off the head of his drum in a military way, and filling the inside of it with some

moveables which did not properly belong to himself; and the onset was made on one of their Lugo officers, who, being most immoderately drunk, had staid too long in the rear; and, poor gentleman! was very unluckily overtaken by a pursuing party, and most shamefully secured by the enemy's rear-guard for felony, though the goods were not found on him; and, in a most terrible plight, conducted to the commanding-officer, with his hands tied, his nose and whiskers bloody, and hatless; with the remnant of a shirt, in as many tatters as a Blenheim pair of colours, though not on quite so honorable an occasion. He was escorted by a posse of the militia to the officer before-mentioned, who, by the same enchantment with that of the prisoner, was quite out of both fighting order, or retreating; under which disadvantage the battle was renewed, and the recruit-army entirely routed, and made prisoners of war by the country-people; till an officer of Castillar's regiment, who had marched on before the rest to prepare their quarters, came post back to them, demanding a parly, and categorical account of the occasion of the battle: the general of the peasants informed him, that they had been plundered by his regiment of thieves, who had taken a blue petticoat and mantle from a poor woman at her house, where they had refreshed themselves on the road, (the very plunder the drummer had so artfully secured in his drum) which offence Mr. Commandant was obliged to compound at the expence of six dollars. In this memorable battle our hero received his full proportion of chastisement, though he never behaved more virtuously in his life-time.

After

After much freedom with all manner of wefts and estrays, little rest, and empty bellies, they made shift to get to Rodrigo, a very strong garrison on the frontiers of Portugal; where they received their entire cloathing and accoutrements, and, for some time afterwards, were exercised twice a day; in the performing of which, there was no moderating the serjeant's temper with liquor, his constitution being quite different from those he had experimentally softened by that argument in England; so that, to prevent a blow now and then on the stomach with the butt-end of a firelock, or a push in the breast with an halbert, he very quietly submitted to a drawback in his pay; which the serjeant took care to let him know was customary, on account of the great pains and trouble he and the rest of the serjeants were at, in instructing foreigners in the noble science of arms; especially the English, who he thought were, of all nations, the most backward in either learning their language or exercise; and probably he was not mistaken in that part of his learned observations, on account of their different pronounciation of the vowels.

As soon as they had been taught their exercise tolerably well, they were put on duty upon the ramparts, but not trusted or suffered to be centinels without the garrison; but where-ever else they were on guard, they were very strictly kept to it; and to do justice to the Spaniards, they are very exact in their discipline, never failing to punish such as are remiss in it, by allowing them bread and water only for their sustenance, and the stocks for their quarters; both which our hero has confessed to me, that he has experienced on

that occasion, for and during many a melancholy and truly pensive hour.

After they had been in garrison about three quarters of a year, they were informed that a peace was concluded between England and Spain ; which account was brought thither by one Mr. Redmond, an Irish merchant, who passed through the garrison in his road to Cadiz.

Our hero had formerly been acquainted with some of the clerks belonging to the war-office, and, upon that account, took upon himself to be secretary of state for foreign affairs ; and drew a petition to the secretary of war, who, I think, he told me was Mr. Craggs ; setting forth, that about fifty of the soldiers, that were sent on the Vigo expedition, were at that time made prisoners of war, and had so continued ever since ; and were, at the time of writing the petition, in Rodrigo garrison. And he seemed to think, that his sufferings on that occasion had enabled him to write very persuasively ; concluding his account with a prayer, that orders might be sent to Mr. Stanhope, who was then plenipotentiary at Madrid, for their being released and sent home.

In this petition, he gave an account of the deserters names as well as the prisoners, that the latter might not be delayed, or their liberty postponed on account of the former ; which infallibly would have been the case, had any one that had deserted, been demanded by the discharge from England ; a mistake, the Spanish governor would readily have taken hold of, as a pretext to detain the rest : but this caution being taken, about six months after the petition was drawn (a duplicate of which was previously sent by our hero

hero to Madrid) a discharge was sent for such as were really prisoners of war; and the benefit of it was accordingly received by them, on the governor's orders to that purpose, directed to one of his commissaries: many of such as had arrived to the honourable titles of cadets, and in high esteem for deserting, became privately very humble petitioners to be discharged; by which they discovered their insincerity to all parties; and some of them were rewarded accordingly, by being sent to prison, in order to secure their pretended allegiance to his most catholic majesty, his crown and dignity.

But notwithstanding our hero had been so instrumental in getting his unfortunate brethren discharged, and happy enough in the expectation of it himself, yet, to his unspeakable grief he received no benefit by it; for though his, and the names of two others of the prisoners, were inserted in it, yet he and they were lying so desperately ill in the hospital, that they were quite disabled from marching; which struck such a damp on the spirits of one of them, that he died the night following; nor was his own affliction less, though he had strength enough to survive it; which he thought more immediately impossible, when his fellow-prisoners came to take their leave of him; every one of them doing it (after their manner) in the most significant expressions of concern and grief, contributing their prayers and tears, as well as something out of their scanty allowance, towards his recovery and relief; at which sight and occasion, a view of all the inconsiderate actions of his younger days, came on him like a torrent of distraction; and made him heartily wish, that

an immediate end might be put to his life; in which there was not the least probability of his ever afterwards having any comfort, slavery and want being the undoubted portion of every one in his condition.

Such as got their discharges, had passports granted them by the governor, and marched directly for Lisbon; and, as soon as they arrived there, were sent to England, by order of Mr. Burnet, who then resided there as consul: but our hero's illness continuing, there was not the least prospect of his recovery, till he had gone through the discipline of an hospital for near three months; and as soon as he found himself in any manner able to walk, he applied to the governor for his passport; who, instead of complying with his petition, sent him word, that though he might have had some pretensions to it, at the time the rest of the men were discharged, yet by continuing so long in the king's hospital after them, he had forfeited his title to it, and was again entered into his majesty's service and pay; and very peremptorily ordered, that he should be put on duty again; which was standing, every second day, centinel at the hospital, where the other of his sick comrades died with grief.

The denial of his discharge, and the bad treatment he met with afterwards, for demanding it, made him determine on deserting, at all events; though he had often seen the cruellest instances of punishment on that occasion, such as might have been reasonably thought sufficient to have deterred him from ever attempting it: however, being centinel one night, without one of the gates, which opened to the road leading to the frontiers
of

of Portugal; and observing the serjeant, and such as were not centinels elsewhere, fast asleep in the guard-room, near which his post was; he laid down his arms, and venturing to borrow a great coat, which lay unused in the guard-room, ran off with it and himself, as expeditiously as he could; never stopping, till he overtook a mule in the road, which, by its being ready saddled, he supposed had strayed from Rodrigo; and accordingly mounted him; and, in order to keep him to his metal, applied his bayonet to all parts of him, by which he bled and ran very freely; and by that means, brought him galloping like a Tartar, towards Almeda, a Portuguese garison, four or five leagues distant from Rodrigo, and the next frontier town to it.

Our hero seeing the gates were shut, dismounted, and waited till such time as they were opened, when, among a croud of people, he made his entry unobserved: and being well acquainted with churches of sanctuary, and the pious uses made of them, he fled to one of them, the door of which was unfortunately shut; but knowing that he might safely deposite himself within the chain, which was hung quite round the church, and was of as equal privilege to a fugitive as if the door had been open, he took his stand there, and crying out ‘Yo me’ lama la Iglesia, which in English is, I call the church to my assistance; he was surrounded in an instant, with all sorts of people.

And here, I believe, it will not be unacceptable to give some account of these sanctuary churches; which are not to be found in villages, or small towns; though all churches in that king-

dom plead privilege for refugees, for a little time; but in cities and large towns, they are remarkably known, by their doors being generally open, candles constantly burning in them, and an iron chain fixed round about the posts which surround the church; all of them being in this manner made remarkable, for the religious use of such as dare not appear any where else.

There are in these churches particular altars for such sort of communicants, which is railed quite round, and within it a picture of a red crucifix, with a representation of several sorts of chains and shackles lying at the foot of it, with these words inscribed, ‘*vengan a mi los qui son muy onerosos,*’ come unto me, ye that are heavy laden.

At this altar, the fugitives wait for the arrival of the chief-priest, who, after he has conversed with, and examined them, they, according to what crimes they confess, are either lodged in the secrestan (the place where the priest puts on his vestment) or sent away by night to some other place of security, till such time as their punishment is commuted or remitted; and though our hero may have made use of some of these sanctuaries upon quarrels, neglect of duty, or one too strictly observed, in regard to his Borachio; yet he cannot by any means agree, that whatever power the church may be allowed to have on some occasions, that she was ever intended to be a nursing-mother for those who are guilty of the most atrocious crimes; murderers themselves not excepted.

Our hero being, as I said before, posted within the chain of his spiritual fortrefs, the croud that was about him were very industrious at inquiring

quiring into the nature of his offence, but more particularly, whether he fled thither for murder; a crime they are more solicitous in screening offenders from than any other; and doubtless, with a view of letting the world see, that the church has an uncontrollable power even over crimes under the strongest denunciations of vengeance.

And though our hero could not converse well in the Portuguese language, he understood so much of it as enabled him to inform the spectators, that the crime of which he was guilty, was deserting from the Spanish service; and as soon as the church door was opened, he went in; and there, with a long pair of beads, which he was pretty well versed in the exercise of, said his prayers with great devotion, and as much sincerity as he was ever known to do, 'That he might not be sent back again;' and, as soon as the coast was clear, he relinquished the exercise of his rosary, for that of eating some bread and garlic, which he had on purpose provided for his journey.

At length, the chief priest came to him, and demanded the occasion of his flight thither, and from whence he came; in answer to which he told him, that he had deserted from Rodrigo, on account of the governor's refusing to give him a passport to his country, in his way to England; and that he was one of the persons, who was to have been released about seven months before, by the English ambassador's orders, but lying sick in an hospital at the time the rest of the men were discharged, he had been left behind.

This account the priest said, he believed might be true; for he remembered that much about

bout the time he mentioned, a number of Englishmen did pass through that garrison, in their way to Lisbon; and, for ought he knew, might be discharged in the manner our hero informed him they had been. He then told his reverence, in the most submissive and supplicative manner, that he hoped he would allow him the protection of the church; to which he did not seem to give much encouragement, though not a positive denial.

This truly apostolical gentleman was very inquisitive whether he was a Roman-catholic; and it is very reasonably to be supposed, that our hero's having confessed himself to be an Englishman, was the occasion of it: however, as a prevailing argument for his security, he professed himself to be Roman; though it gained him very little credit; for notwithstanding our hero was pretty well informed in the tenets of that doctrine, yet the priest attacked, examined, and cross-examined him so closely, that he was often at a non-plus, especially in regard to his postulatus, arcana credibilia, ecclesiæ potestatem, and metaphysical conclusions of the most surprising nature; and had no other way, at last, of concealing his want of judgment in these mysterious assertions, than by informing him, that unfortunately he did not understand the Portuguese language well enough, to explain his sentiments on matters of such prodigious consequence.

The priest and our hero had not continued long in this learned conversation, before a Spanish corporal, and a file of musqueteers under his command, came into the church, and quite put an end to their arguments; the corporal very submissively

missively applying to the instructive father, that our hero might be given up to his more mechanical tuition: upon which, his reverence confessed, without any hesitation, that it was a standing rule between their garison and that of Rodrigo, that all deserters from either, shall be given up on demand; but as he had fled to that church for a sanctuary, he should be sent back again under the protection of such a writing, as should secure him from punishment; which was accordingly drawn and delivered to our hero, being directed to the chief priest of the city of Rodrigo; and had it not been for those credentials, I am apt to believe, that he would never have had it in his power to desert again; but must have made his exit, as I have heard him say, he has seen others do on the same occasion, at the head of a regiment, without the lingring pains of a bed-ridden constitution; of which he was very apprehensive, when he saw the corporal bowing so low to the priest, and so well satisfied with his determination against him; which as soon as he had received at large, the corporal, glad enough of such paternal directions as were given, in regard to our hero's being sent back again, that instant dragged him out of the church; which he left with much more unwillingness than ever he was known to do any place of divine service before; being by no means convinced, that his officers at Rodrigo would pay due honour to the contents of a letter on which his life depended.

As soon as the corporal had escorted him about a mile from Almeda, he ordered him to be stripped of his borrowed coat, and most part of his regimentals; and taking a pair of thumb-screws

3
screws out of his pocket, they were put on him with so much severity, that his wrists and arms were swelled to such a degree, that he could not follow his leaders; upon which account, he now and then got a stroke with the halbert, or a kick from some of the party, just as they thought proper; though they could not imagine that either sort of usage would do much service, if they had properly recollected, that not one of their own countrymen would alter the majesty of his pace, to have shortned the dignity of a whipping.

And to crown all his misfortunes, the corporal very waggishly told him, that notwithstanding the billet he had got from the priest, he was in a very fair way, of being hanged, for the coat; for the taking of which, there was not one word of indulgence mentioned in the paper; nor indeed could there be, for our hero never dreamed of discovering to his father-confessor, his taking away any thing he was not bound to restore; a piece of practice never heard of in an enemy's country, especially where he had received such cruel usage; so that upon the whole, he was far from being sure that, though he might possibly escape being executed in a martial way, he should not satisfy the law in a more scandalous one; which in some measure destroyed the hopes he had entertained from the priest's letter, his sheet-anchor, when he left Almeda.

The circumstances our hero was now in, put him under the severest reflexions for distrusting providence in regard to his liberty, and of the folly of using such dangerous methods to procure it, when patience and a resigned dependence might,

might, at some time or other, have found a much better way for his escape.

At length, our hero was brought again to Rodrigo, where he refused to give up his credentials (the priest's letter) to any one but himself; and, as a reward for his being so faithful a carrier, he was ordered into the stocks, and there continued till he got an opportunity of delivering it to the chaplain of the regiment, whose humanity he was so well acquainted with, that he was sure of its being properly delivered.

By the virtue and efficacy of this letter, he was forthwith discharged from his confinement; which though it preserved him from corporal punishment, it did not from a pecuniary one; for his pay was reduced to three half-pence a day, and he put on duty for thirty days together, at the very place he deserted from; where if he had been posted to this hour, it is ten to one if he ever would have attempted to desert again; being so terrified at the apprehensions of the coat; which, as it was not afterwards attended with any bad consequences, he concluded that his ghostly father had given him a plenary indulgence, instead of a limited one.

And here it may not be improper to give the readers a description of the Spanish service, which our hero, by this time, was well able to do; particularly as it may be of some little use to the public, by deterring some of the poor ignorant people of this country, from going abroad to starve under all the rigour of military discipline, without any reasonable hope of ever returning again, unless by desertion; the difficulty and danger of which,

which will appear from several parts of this history.

The pay of every private man in the foot-service of Spain, is no more than two pence three farthings a day, and a pound, or a little more, of coarse and ill-tasted bread: out of the pay, a farthing a day is stopped towards the chaplain's maintenance, and another farthing deducted for the woman who washes the company's linen; each man puts in seven farthings a day towards his mess, to every one of which there are six men; so that in fact, a private man receives no more than an half-penny a day, to supply him with wine and all other contingencies: their regimental cloathing (except that of the Swiss and Walloon guards) is made of coarse blanketting; and one regiment differs from another, only in the colour of the facing of the sleeves, nor is there any distinction in their serjeants or corporals liveries, other than that they are allowed a mixed-coloured worsted lace, on their sleeves and pockets, and sometimes shoulder-knots of the like manufacture.

The native soldiers are the most unwholesome looking, dirty fellows upon the face of the earth; as well acquainted with murder as any other crime; and such gamesters by nature, that they will play their shirts and ammunition-bread away, and afterwards live on onions, garlick and turnips, provided for them by the assistance of their natural genius, theft.

There is not a week, in which some of them are not either whipped or shot; their own colonels being their implacable enemies, in peace; and so far from doing justice to foreigners, that they will not so much as listen to their complaints,
but

but chastise them without mercy, at discretion : and, as to their officers in general, they have the poorest pay, the most tinsell'd dress and equipage, together with the most revengeful minds, ill-favoured countenances, and unsound bodies, of any troops in Europe.

As to their chaplains, though the warfare is in truth very great, yet their exercise in regard to it is very small ; for mass from the chaplain once a week is generally the complement ; though a stricter regard is had to confessions, which are indispensably enjoined at certain times ; and there is no other way of commuting for a neglect of that sort, than by paying for it : but at those times our hero had so much conduct as to attend ; by no means thinking it adviseable to have too reals of plate stopped out of the quarterly clearings of his pay ; which was the sum to be detained from every man returned by the chaplain as a non-confessant : and whether the fund arising from such sort of delinquencies was applied to pious uses, is a mystery not easily to be discovered.

His confessional behaviour our hero learned from his fellow-prisoner in St. Jago ; which was, never to confess any thing too material against himself, (especially in cases of restitution) by which means penance was seldom laid on him, and much seldomer performed : consequences highly agreeable to such as have no great faith in the excellency or merit of self-punishment.

Our hero was now quite tired of so wretched a service, and out of all manner of hopes either of being discharged or escaping from it, the officers into whose hands he was delivered at his return

turn from Almeda, having ordered a stricter eye to be kept over him than usual ; which he could easily discern by his being kept from all posts that might have given him an opportunity of escaping ; though the serjeant's memorandum of the coat was, in fact, a stronger barrier than all the caution they could make use of ; so that he determined to attempt some other method of getting away ; and accordingly put on a resolution of counterfeiting lameness, from which, in reality, he was far from being free, occasioned by his frequent lodgments in the stocks ; however, that no obstacle might arise to prevent his being discharged as a perfect invalid, he appeared to be lamer every day than other ; and at last so visibly lost the use of his feet, that if he could but have procured a pair of crutches and a blind man, he might have got a much more comfortable maintenance, than what he was to expect from staying where he was : and really the ignorance of the Spanish surgeon was so great, that he never suspected the counterfeit at all ; and accordingly, upon his report, he was excused from all duty ; with a promise from his colonel, that if he was not cured of his lameness by the next general review, he should be discharged : the only reward he wanted for his ingenuity.

But here again he failed in his attempt ; though perhaps no cripple living ever put on a more mendicant face, or made a properer application of disjointed limbs, or ever indeed paid a more devout attendance where-ever miraculous cures were recorded to have been made on such occasions ; and, what might reasonably be thought a paradox, was too soon restored to the use of his limbs again ;

again ; for a great many Irish officers attended at the ensuing general review for draughting out foreigners, especially English and Irish, to supply the places of such as had been lost in Sicily ; and among those officers, there was a French surgeon, who belonged to Mahony's dragoons, and probably a very skilful one, at least our hero thought so ; for, upon searching him (a method they always take with such as list, or are forced into their service) to prevent their recruiting invalids instead of effective men ; the most ingenious surgeon put on a plaguy arch look, telling our hero, ' That he was sorry to see him so lame ; and that, poor man ! he must certainly have been in very bad hands ; however he would not have him be quite dejected ;' renumerating a muster-roll of cures he had performed on people in the very same condition with himself, by applications and recipe's, as far beyond his comprehension as an Hebrew comment on the Levitical law ; promising to perfect his cure as soon as he got to Saragossa, where the regiment, which he was surgeon to, then lay, and into which our hero was to be incorporated ; so that instead of being discharged, when orders came for the rest of the draughts to march on foot to Saragossa, he was mounted on an ass : the surgeon very naturally apprehending, that if he was restored to the use of his limbs at once, the miracle would seem a little incredible : and a most excellent figure our hero made, astride an ass, on a pack-saddle, without either halter or bridle, with his legs hanging almost to the ground ; and on purpose in that position, to shew that they were entirely useless.

He

He was attended in the rear by an half-starved fellow, who was the owner of the beast, and very expertly goaded him every minute, with a nail fixed in the point of a long stick, to prevent his stopping or falling; but, maugre all the driver's diligence, he tumbled so often, that our hero was so inhumanly bruised, that he had no occasion to counterfeit lameness; and was so full of dust, and so sun-burned, that doubtless if Don Miguel Cervantes had met him in his travels, he would have taken him for the celebrated squire of the knight of the ill-favoured countenance; and in this captivating condition was he conveyed to Saragossa: nor was the mortification of travelling in this manner sufficient; but the additional expences that attended him, his aid-de-camp and beast were afterwards deducted out of his subsistence.

Within a day or two after he had lain bed-ridden at his quarters, the French devil of a surgeon came to pay him a visit, and, in a very physical tone, let him know how greatly he was concerned at the cruel manner he had been conveyed to his quarters; and that doubtless his lameness must have been increased by so violent an agitation as that of riding on an ass, especially without proper accoutrements: and having felt every joint in his body, in such a manner as discovered a grin in every muscle of his countenance, he told him, 'That, at present, he could not observe any dislocation, but apprehended a small contusion;' to prevent the consequence of which, he ordered him as much physic, and of such a sort as, in all probability, would have murdered a whole battalion of other recruits; though,

though, before he made the visit, he assured captain Nugent, into whose troop our hero was put, that his lameness was all a farce : upon which account, as soon as the physical operations were at an end, he was obliged to attend his horse and duty as well as the rest of the dragoons, under an irrevocable sentence of being flogged if his lameness continued ; which was all the compassion he received, or, as he often told me, he deserved, for his pretending to want health, which Providence had all along so unlimitedly supplied him with.

This service of the dragoons is far more laborious and confined than any other, the men not being allowed an hour's liberty in four and twenty, on account of watering and feeding their horses three times a day, and dressing them twice. The horse and they have the same pay, which is a groat a day, paid them twice a week, and as much more running on in the name of clearings ; of which, by paying the clerk, farrier, riding-master, and many other contingencies out of it, seldom any part of it came to their share. They are supplied at all their quarters with chopped straw and barley, kept in magazines for that purpose : their horses are small, but beautiful, of different colours in the same regiment, neither docked nor gelt ; and a great many of them extremely vicious.

Our hero was so unused to such sort of cattle, and such an unexperienced rider, that on his first setting out, he was frequently thrown from his horse, to the great satisfaction and laughter of the spectators, and many a severe bruise and kick to himself, of a much worse nature than those from
his

his peaceful ass. However, this part of their service has the advantage of any other ; the dragoons only being sent on what they call Recoverancas ; that is to say, their being put on free quarters, on such towns as are returned in arrear, for any imposts or revenues due to the crown ; especially in regard to the customs for wine, snuff, and tobacco ; during which time, and till the arrears can be paid, the inhabitants are obliged, every day, to supply each horseman *gratis* with two pounds of their best bread, a pound of meat, with the ingredients for an olio, a prone of wine, (a measure consisting of about three pints) besides as much straw and barley as the dragoons, on such an occasion, thought necessary for their horses ; which last allowance was very often commuted for one of a much easier digestion.

It came to our hero's turn, as sometimes it had done before, to go on one of these parties, which generally afforded a good deal of diversion ; for the serjeants, who were the only subaltern officers who commanded on these wholesome expeditions, never hindered the men from exacting their allowance in a very military way : partly, in order to expedite the payment of the arrears, and not altogether without a view to hushmoney.

The peasants were in as much awe and dread of the dragoons, on these occasions, as they would have been of a party of foragers, especially such as were hired troops, who understood eating and drinking much better than themselves ; and very often put the landlord and his family to the expence of an extemporary curse, at seeing a Swiss eat a pound and a half of meat, and drink three pints of wine, and sometimes a great deal more,

at a meal ; an allowance more than sufficient for their whole family for a week ; a miracle so truly great, and the entertainment so expensive, that the men very often dined in public ; the house in which they quartered being crouded with spectators at such an unaccountable sight ; though not one of them religious enough to ask a blessing, or return thanks for what their guests had received.

As to our hero's part, he has told me upon the word of a christian, that he never excused his Spanish majesty's debtors and farmers from any part of his demand, but more especially that of the wine ; a double quantity of which was sometimes accepted of, in lieu of the horse's corn ; a very notable way of extracting spirits from barley without an alembic : and this was an exchange the inhabitants gladly made, it being much easier for them to provide wine than the other demands ; and at last the liberty taken upon these expeditions put our hero in mind of deserting again, so that being under little or no restriction, nor on any duty that required a vigilant attendance, and Rodrigo and the coat almost worn out of his memory, he made another attempt, having a fair opportunity of putting it into execution, at Balbastro, a town where there arises a very great revenue from snuff, tobacco, and salt ; and though it is death by the laws of that country, either to run or conceal those commodities, yet there is more of each sort of them clandestinely sent away from thence, or privately sold, than perhaps from any other town in that part of Spain.

To this place he was sent on a party of recoverancas, and was quartered on a house where his landlord and family made no despicable figure ;

G

lut

but using him in the most contemptuous and disdainful manner, he was quite at a loss to know from whence it could arise, particularly as he had shewed them more respect than was always done to people circumstanced as they were: but at length, observing that some of the family were up whole nights, he suspected that they dealt in the smuggling trade; and by their extraordinary treatment, intended to terrify him from taking notice of it, or, at least, from making any discovery; but being naturally of an inquisitive temper, he was resolved to pry a little further into the matter; and accordingly told his landlord that he intended to lie abroad with one of his comrades, and that he need not expect him home for a night or two, and accordingly went away; and on the third night came home about twelve o'clock, and found the doors of the house open. He went in as privately as he could, and laid himself on his bed, which he was at some trouble to find, there being no lamp burning; from which he guessed what work they were at; for in Spain, in every reputable family, they keep a lamp burning all night: in about an hour's time, he perceived, through the partition of his room, that his landlord and two more went with dark lanthorns into the next room to him; one of them was loaded with a deer's skin, and the other with a cask, which they concealed under a large stone near the hearth, and then walked off very deliberately; little imagining there was an Inspector so near; and though he did not see what was contained in the skin or cask, one that had never read algebra might easily guess; and upon his finding out their way of merchandise, he thought it but reasonable

sonable to make some use of the discovery, and become a partner in the traffic ; at least on the footing of a discoverer, to get some assistance towards his deserting ; an aid that was absolutely necessary on so dangerous an enterprise : and accordingly, about noon, having an opportunity of being alone with his landlord, he began to talk to him about the great duty on snuff and tobacco, and the penalty they were liable to, who offered to defraud the king of it ; and that he believed, was it not for the vigilance of his majesty's troops great part of them would be run, and consequently the duty never paid. Seignior Domingo Suranda (which was his landlord's name) took very little notice of an harangue of that sort, but shrugging up his shoulders, in a most scornful manner, replied, that, ' He never concerned himself about things of that nature ; however he thought it was a business that did not in any wise belong to the army, who had work enough on their hands, if properly minded, to defend his majesty and his subjects from their avowed enemies ; and that they would make a much better figure in spying out means to defeat their projects, than in plundering a poor industrious man of a pound or two of snuff or tobacco, because truly what they were contained in had not the initial letters of his majesty's name marked on it for a passport ; and that he really thought every man unworthy of his majesty's livery, who would tarnish it with informations, and the lord knows what ; and as to the officers of the revenue, they were sharp enough, as he was told, and for aught he knew, too much so, against the most necessary members of society, the merchants ; and that

most of them got more by their oaths than their honesty ; but that he, blessed be the Holy Virgin, was neither in the power of a tax-gatherer, duty-man, foldier, or any informer whatsoever.

The latter part of Seignior Domingo's declaration was in such an insolent stile to the gentleman dragoon, that from the contents of it, our hero had a fair opportunity of discovering to him what he meant by the former part of his ; and accordingly told him, with a good deal of warmth, that notwithstanding the specimen he had given of his regard to the officers of the revenue, and gentlemen of the army, he was more in the power of one of them than, in all probability, he imagined ; hinting to him what he had observed was transacted the night before, pointing to the stone under which the snuff and tobacco were hid.

Don Domingo was, as most of his countrymen are, a special ugly fellow ; and, at hearing this declaration, was quite converted into the figure of a devil ; he trembled in a most uncommon manner, and, by the change of his countenance, our hero had reason to believe that he would have assassinated him (which is often practised upon less provocation) but on spying his bayonet, which was exposed on purpose, he fell to intreaties of the most abject nature, and begged of him, for the sake of the Virgin and all saints, not to discover what he had seen there ; and that he would gratify him upon that occasion, after what manner soever he pleased. Our hero thought there was no great occasion for driving a Smithfield bargain, and therefore told him at once, that his
life

life as well as effects were in his power ; but that he neither intended to take away one, or do him much prejudice as to the other ; but that as he was a soldier against his will in his country, and, what was natural to all mankind, willing to return to his own, this was an opportunity that seemed to lay itself in his way ; and that he expected his assistance in providing him what money and necessaries might help to support him on his journey ; especially as he put his confidence in him, as one in as great a dilemma as himself ; one too who must know how fatal the consequences of a discovery must be to either. And though this was an indication that our hero had no regard to his principles, and must sit very unnaturally on the pride of a Spaniard, yet he embraced him in the most servile manner, with the appellations of ‘ Worthy Sir, brother, friend, noble soldier, and now his confidant, how happy is it for me to be the subject of so much generosity and compassion ?’ and calling to witness all the saints in his breviary, vowed, ‘ he would, abstracted from the obligations he then lay under, have ventured his life to have procured him his liberty, had he imagined it was what he so earnestly wanted ; maintaining, with great strength of argument, that being a soldier against one’s will, was a servitude against the law of nations ; and whosoever delivered him, or any one else, from such circumstances, would do as meritorious an act, as he that by his prayers brought a sinner out of purgatory : but as to money, it was the grief of his soul, that it was not in his power to supply him with as much as his gratitude and inclinations prompt-

ed him to.' And having expatiated on his losses in trade, the largeness of his family, and the exorbitant duties men of his profession were obliged to pay, he complained heavily of the narrowness of his circumstances ; which our hero did not in the least apprehend to be the case ; he having, without doubt, followed the smuggling trade long enough to have equipped him more like an ambassador than a deserter ; and accordingly he insisted on a price adequate to the emergency of the occasion : however, Domingo swore so tenaciously to his want of money, that our hero was forced into preliminaries ; which were, that he should provide him with six pistoles, with cloaths and accoutrements proper for his march ; assuring him that it was not only (what he had so fully maintained before) a charitable and meritorious act, but the safest thing he could do, by, in that manner, putting it out of our hero's or any one's power else, after his absence and desertion, to make a discovery of such fatal consequence to him.

Domingo joined immediately in the conclusion ; and accordingly, in exchange for our hero's regimentals, provided him the next day with a brown frize coat, waistcoat, breeches, a cloak, with a bonnet of the same colour ; together with a poniard, and his viaticum of six pistoles ; and, about midnight, ushered him out of Balbastro.

Our hero told him that he intended to go to France, and desired he would furnish him with the best instructions he could to get to the borders of it ; which he accordingly did, forewarning him that the country was very badly inhabited, mountainous

tainous and destitute of hospitality ; but that to all appearance, those difficulties might contribute to prevent his being discovered ; which was an account equally as agreeable to his conductor as to himself : equipped in this manner, his landlord walked with him about half a league before he took his farewell, which he seemed to do in a very courteous manner, giving him his benediction, and promises not to forget him in his prayers ; the natural meaning of which he took to be, that he might never come back again to Balbastro, or be his guest a second time, in any other part of the world.

As soon as his landlord was gone, our hero began to contemplate the hazardous condition he was in, and the imperfect route and terrible character which had been given him of the country he was to pass through ; and, like his brother-traveller in the Pilgrim's Progress, was in the Slough of Despond, before he had well begun his journey ; but repentance was then truly too late ; and so, confiding in his dress, poniard, and heels, he began his march.

To prevent his being seen or overtaken, he travelled all the first night, and in the morning lay down to rest under an old wall, and the following evening he came to a little village, which he could see from the place he rested at, and there took up his quarters till the night following ; and so continued changings his lodgings, and going from one village to another for some time, through a country which exactly corresponded with his landlord's description ; telling all such as were inquisitive, and he could not avoid conversing with,

that he was an Irishman ; for whose country he knew they had a great esteem ; and that he was travelling on a religious account ; and being a true Roman Catholic, and a scholar, hoped in due time to be admitted into ecclesiastical orders.

This account of himself took very naturally ; though at first, the uncommon fondness persons of all ranks shewed to novelties, and historical accounts of countries they were strangers to, put his invention on the rack ; and sometimes he was at a loss for curiosities to supply them with, but at last he became so ready and expert in his historical declamations, that doubtless, at this time, great numbers of them are recorded by some faithful amanuensis of that country.

Being at length stocked with legends of all sorts, equally as serviceable for information as admonition, he travelled above an hundred miles in his way to Fontarabia, which lies between France and Spain, avoiding every large or garrison town that lay in his way ; and in about eight days began to be free from all apprehensions of being overtaken by any one from the regiment he had deserted, and began to think himself secure of getting into France : and surely no man living was ever more rejoiced, or more sensibly affected with the hopes of it ; and relied so far on his escape, that he began to lay a plan of his future carriage and exactness of life, whenever he should get back to his own country ; which he was fully determined should be quite the reverse of what it had been ; having been very feelingly brought to
a sense

a sense of the consequences of his folly and inconsideration.

He was under no manner of apprehensions of any danger that might arise from his travelling through France ; all he was at a loss for was the nature of the country and the genius of the people ; with whom, though they are of a much more generous disposition, it is more difficult to finesse, than with a credulous Spaniard.

He had as yet spent but little of his landlord's contribution money, the historical part of his conversation having generally procured him a tolerable subsistence, especially among the charitable and believing priests and friars ; and indeed what he had spent was without any manner of satisfaction ; for the houses of entertainment in that kingdom are the worst in the whole world ; and a traveller, unless he is one of distinction, though he arrive never so tired or late at an inn, must go and buy his own provisions, especially such as had no better equipage than himself ; and the landlord, with the most exalted gravity, vouchsafes to let his guests know, that in regard to a religious command, for the entertainment of strangers and travellers, wine and bread shall be provided for them ; and, as a condescension extraordinary, some one should dress their meat ; for which they will exact a most exorbitant price, perhaps a real of plate each night for a bed, dirty to the last degree, and full of bugs and vermin ; your meat, if boiled, must have garlic and oil mixed in the broth ; if roasted, laid on a tile, and burned to a coal ; a single egg and a piece of bacon of about an ounce weight is a feast of fatlings ; but the most extraordinary of all

their entertainments is a raw salt sardena (a fish not unlike our herrings) mixed with red pepper, oil, and garlic, which is what they provide for themselves on Fridays, and other more remarkable fast-days : a fast our hero often kept more religiously than any of the strictest natives. This entertainment not only being within all the canons of the church relative to fasting, but till he was a little accustomed to it, serving to disburden his stomach of all the food it had received the day before ; and is in fact an excellent emetic, or, rather, provision for an Hottentot.

There is another punishment in that country, and indeed something worse than fasting, I mean that of the rack, to which our hero was often an eye-witness, and is a most cruel invention to extort confessions from such as are only suspected of a crime ; and this sort of punishment is executed on the unhappy wretches by twisting a small cord round their arm, so tight that the blood often bursts out ; and in this manner they are drawn up, with their arms backwards, upon a long post, which, by letting the body down by frequent jerks, dislocates the shoulders of the suspected person ; and this piece of cruelty is repeated till a satisfactory confession is made, and that very often (through excess of misery) of crimes the poor sufferer is intirely guiltless. How happy are the people who, by their laws and constitution, are not only secure from such sort of punishments, but find mercy in execution itself, for crimes they are fully convicted of !

This digression, it is hoped, will not be unacceptable, as it is a detail of real facts, probably
never

never related before ; and our hero shall be no longer detained from the pursuit of his journey, who, though he thought himself quite free from the Spanish service, entertainment, and punishment, fortune was still his enemy ; and he was, in some time after, forced into it again.

End of the FIRST BOOK.

THE JOURNAL OF

JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
JOURNAL OF
JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
JOURNAL OF
JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
JOURNAL OF
JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
JOURNAL OF
JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
JOURNAL OF
JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
JOURNAL OF
JOHN R. KELLY
FROM 1840 TO 1845
IN THE
CITY OF NEW YORK
AND
THE STATE OF NEW YORK

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM.
BOOK II.

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM
BOOK

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM.
BOOK II.

OUR hero still continued travelling with his usual caution, till at length he overtook a pilgrim; about whom there was a great concourse of people, partly on account of his beard, which was entirely white, and longer by many inches than ornaments of that nature usually are. He was a very old man near six feet high, had a remarkable mole on one side of his face, of a very morose aspect, and uncommon solemnity in his person and carriage, and his dress extremely odd: his head was covered with a sort of a bonnet, with the crown or top of it, high and flat, which, as well as the sides, was inlaid with cockle-shells; about his neck he had a piece of leather, cut out almost in the form of a modern pillareen, over a long

long black cloak, on which were sewed several little leaden images of St. James, hammered out very thin; he carried in his hand a staff about seven feet long, with a patriarch's face nicely carved on the top of it; he had a pair of beads which reached down from his girdle to his knees, with a large black crucifix at the end of them; instead of shoes he wore sandals, tied with a remarkable black string: and in this dress he was haranguing the spectators, who gave great attention to his discourse; which, for the most part, turned on the nature and excellency of his profession, and of the infinite number of miracles he had seen, and how meritorious it was to countenance and assist such of his fraternity as conscientiously travelled, moneyless and hungry, through deserts, over mountains, and often to places unacquainted with the footsteps of mankind, to view and exercise their devotion, at the shrines and monuments of saints and martyrs of their holy religion; and, for farther edification, he continued relating a long bead-roll of traditions, far too numerous and weighty for the recollection of one who had no great faith in his doctrine.

Our hero looked very wishfully at him, and observing his countenance with all the accuracy he could, discovered, that he was not a native of Spain; which it was no difficult matter to do, every Spaniard, like the Jewish tribes, carrying a natural deformity in his countenance belonging to no other nation but his own.

And as soon as the croud was dispersed, which gave our hero an opportunity of talking to him alone,

alone, he asked him his country and name ; which he said was James Bell, and that he was born in Ireland, but had been from thence above forty years ; which had the appearance of more truth than great part of the history he had just before given of his travels ; for though he was perfectly a Spaniard by his speech, our hero assured me that he seemed quite a stranger to the English, or any other language he understood : after some little conversation, he made the same inquiries of our hero ; who told him his name, but, as he knew the necessity for so doing, deceived him as to his country ; telling him that he was his countryman, though, at that time, he had never been in Ireland ; but as he had been so long a soldier in the Irish brigades, he remembered to have heard the names of Dublin, Cork, Essex-street, and Templebar ; which were all the places in that kingdom which he could recollect.

They began their acquaintanceship very lovingly, and after a shake or two by the hand, Bell gave him a more particular account of the uses and sanctity of his office ; by the former part of which, as at some time or other he possibly might be a gainer, he had no business to dispute the latter ; and accordingly gratified him with an astonishing assent to all he said.

Upon Bell's inquiring where he intended travelling to, he told him to any place from whence he could most readily get into France, and from thence into England or Ireland : though Bell suspected the information he had given him of his
being

being his countryman ; as appeared by his telling him, he wondered that he could not remember more of the towns, or some of the names and families in Ireland ; which our hero was not prepared categorically to answer, in any other manner than that he was born of English parents, who brought him very young from thence to London ; and in some sort strengthening his credit on that occasion, by repeating some few names of his brother-soldiers in Castillar's regiment, such as Burk, Cavenagh, Haly, and Murphy, who were in the same company with himself. He was likewise very inquisitive to know what inducement our hero had for coming into Spain, and particularly, whether he had not been in that service ; which he did not think worth his while to deny, being well assured of his ability of dealing more securely with him, than possibly he might have done with his speechless Highlander at Preston, at the same time letting him know, that he was a scholar, and had some hopes of being admitted into the priesthood, if once he could get home, and return from thence with proper credentials from some of the bishops, or such others, whose testimonials might be requisite for his introduction into holy orders ; the secret of some part of which office, he had been let into by his former chaplain, one Dominick Murphy ; whom, on account of his scholarship, he had frequently served as an adjutor at mass : his master, the priest, was one that understood his office mighty well, both spiritually and temporally, and being of a chearful disposition, would rather indulge, than expose the frailties of human life ; and observing
our

our hero to be very expert in his part of his office, and his reverence not over nice in his inquiries about the depth of his other religious qualifications, he had neither will nor room to suspect his integrity: by this attendance he used to get now and then a real of plate, especially at their festival-offerings; and some more extensive contributions, from particular devotees, on their favourite saint's day; but his most munificent patroness of all was saint Bridget, a saint that had entailed the spirit of charity in a most remarkable manner, on all such as claimed her special protection.

And though our hero was quite at the sag end of a spiritual calling, yet he was trusted with a particular confidence, such a one, as though he never arrived at the full dominion of a confessor shall be as inviolably kept a secret, as if he had been one; he having, as will appear hereafter, received acts of kindness and compassion from all sorts of religious professors; which, let them arise from what fountain they would, at least deserve a grateful acknowledgment from him. But to return to our pilgrim, who could not forbear harping on our hero's having been in the Spanish service; he told him that whatever terms necessity might have made him comply with, it was a profession by no means agreeable to him; and that he could be of much more service to the catholics by being a priest than a soldier; and though there was a vast disproportion between the duties of one and the other, yet he was fully convinced of his
being

being more able to execute the first than the last ; on account of the great instructions he got from some of their colleges, and his own indefatigable application to study.

The pilgrim seemed to pray heartily that our hero might succeed in his endeavours, and promised he should not want his assistance ; and, if so inclined, that he should travel with him, either as his relation, or a probationer in his way of life ; on which he expatiated again very largely, adding to what he had said before, ' that pilgrimage, though not absolutely one of the commandments, yet it was an injunction next to one ; and that the longer and farther one of his profession travelled, the nearer most assuredly he was to Heaven.' In which undeniable consequence, our hero most heartily joined ; and as he intended to bear him company, as fervently wished for the experience of ; and sure a more commodious carriage to translate us from the miseries of this world, could not have been invented.

Our hero thanked him very kindly for offering him his protection, and allowing him to be his companion, but particularly for the favour of acknowledging him as a relation ; and at that instant embraced his offers, and without the formality of listing-money, became a soldier under his religious banner ; upon which, it is thought, as Bell was conscious of some mysteries in his profession not to be exposed too publicly, he enjoined him profound secrecy, in regard to whatever might afterwards

terwards offer itself to his observation ; at the same time telling him, with a very expressive shrug, that many were the frailties of human nature.

There was nothing surprizing in this inuendo ; and as our hero had no great opinion of the use or sanctity of that order, he readily understood what the pilgrim meant ; and promised the most faithful observation of, and compliance with, that or any other injunction he should lay on him, in that respect ; and that he might be prepared, as well as he could, with a dress suitable to the life he was entering on, he took a nearer and more distinct view of Bell's than he had done before.

He observed that he had a large girdle, or be't, round his middle, under his cloak, of much the same circumference and size with such as are made use of by those antient musicians called by the name of pipers, for conveying with security, as well as privacy, their enchanting drones, to which was tied a calabash much like the rind of a pom-pion, dried and scooped, with a small mouth on the top of it, for a cork ; which was his vessel to carry wine ; he had likewise fixed to the same girdle, a large pocket lined with tin, in which he deposited his charitable luncheons, either of bread or meat.

With this sort of furniture, our hero supplied himself as expeditiously as he could ; utensils necessary to strengthen and fortify his comrade and him against the external conflicts they were to meet with ;

with; and as to the cockle-shells, and images of St. James, he was not a graduate of sufficient standing for them, at that time; but in order to improve himself in every branch of the profession, he constantly attended his old friend at all chapels, convents, hermitages, and processions, and especially at places of festival devotion; a far more agreeable as well as lucrative institution than that of fasting; the last of which had too much solemnity in it for travellers who were implacable enemies to hunger and thirst, which never attacked them but when the tin pocket and calabash were empty; evils which they generally found an extraordinary readiness in all sorts of people to prevent; who, to tell the truth, most charitably administered to their necessities, or rather, superfluities; for, whenever they came to a town in which there was a convent, they were sure of a comfortable entertainment; and where there was none, of no despicable refreshment from the priest of the parish, and at his instigation, from a great many of his parishioners.

How easy a transition might there be from this account, to shew the improper application sometimes made of the most amiable branch of religion, charity; too often inconsiderately given where it is not required, and withheld from many, who must perish for want of it.

During our hero's and his comrades peregrination, they had, in every considerable town, a circle of attendants, extensive enough for an ambassador,

bassador, at his public entry, all expecting novelty and information ; whom they gratified with as many fictions as their inventions could frame ; and tho' Bell was the person they expected the most remarkable accounts from, yet our hero, in the midst of his declamations, would now and then get together a select audience of his own, which he furnished with retail wonders, extracted from those he knew the pilgrim made off by wholesale ; which he conscientiously thought a fair perquisite for a young beginner.

As soon as they had made what advantage they could of their hearers, they marched to a convent, or some other place of hospitality appointed for their reception ; and though the veneration for men of their profession was much abated, from what what had been formerly paid them, yet they were received at some capuchin convents with most remarkable ceremony and regard ; which our hero was enabled to describe more at large, than he could the reception given at other places ; being allowed, what was by no means customary, to be present at some of these convents during their whole ceremony.

As soon as Bell had got admission into one of these convents, the padre prior, or chief of them, was called to him ; and after his pilgrim's credentials, which he kept in a tin-box, were read and examined, he was introduced in form to the brotherhood ; before whom, the prior washed his sanctified feet with warm water, wiping them afterwards with a clean towel.

The

The next piece of ceremony was, the father's pouring oil out of a cruet on a piece of cotton, making the sign of the cross over his face, and then anointing his eye-lids, the top of his nose, and both sides of his mouth with it: our hero being quite a stranger to this mystery, inquired of his comrade, why he was particularly anointed in those parts of his face; to which he replied, that the ceremony was performed in that manner, to make it square exactly with the form of a crucifix, which, in regard to the expansion, it does.

After this was over, Bell was brought to every altar in the chapel of the convent, at which he, and sometimes his pupil, kneeled with great humility, most devoutly repeating ten Ave Maria's and a Pater-noster; and were there shewed all the relics and curiosities belonging to them; and however fluctuating our hero's belief was, I have been told, that the wonder and veneration he shewed on these occasions, were by no means inferior to those of his comrade; and, as youthful piety attracts the greatest regard, so that of our hero frequently procured him the most remarkable benedictions.

The ceremony ending here, his poor comrade, fatigued to be sure, with the tediousness of his spiritual introduction, was brought by the Novitiate, or youngest friar, into the refectory, and there supplied with what provisions the convent afforded, of which, let the complement be what it

it would, the allowance of wine was shamefully small.

Upon these occasions, where our hero was thought unworthy of admission, he had his luncheon sent out to him, but a strict imbargo laid on the liquor that should have digested it ; an inhuman trial of his involuntary abstinence, and an unchristianly-like restriction, never so much as once thought of, when the canons for observing of lent were under the contemplation of the primitive fathers.

The beds that were provided for them were tolerably good, and as they were obliged to retire quite cool to them, they slept without the least inquietude or interruption ; a little of which might have been dispensed with, for a better allowance of wine.

At their taking a farewell of the friars, the youngest was ordered to attend them into the town ; and the office of begging for them left to his sagacity, which was always executed in a most prevailing tone ; and very attractive was the sentence, ‘ charity for a poor pilgrim ; ’ safely delivering such as it had a proper influence on, sometimes of an egg, a piece of bacon, or a dried fish, and bread of all sorts ; and sometimes what was far more acceptable, some wine, which they poured into their calabashes, and their superfluous provisions they put into their pockets, provided for that use ; and thus supplied, took their leave of

H

the

the young mendicant, to which the good capuchin added his benediction; a favour, perhaps, bestowed on two beggars, not more meritorious of it than many others, who got a blessing of the same nature before, and possibly from the same hands.

When they had thus dispatched their purveyor, and had got at some distance from whence they had been so kindly received, they usually sat down, and, in a very friendly manner, divided their contributions; in the execution of which brotherly office, Bell had both the will and power to act too cunningly for our hero; other than that he took care to make some collections by himself, which he could not find in his heart to divide at all; and indeed our hero's capacity was so extensive, that in a little time he learned to explain Bell's notes so well, that he could set out a miraculous history in almost as good a light as himself.

As soon as their pockets had passed examination, they entered on that of their calabashes, out of which they took such cordial draughts, that, during the division, they often fell fast asleep, quite free from any distrust of providence or any thing else; in short, quite relieved from all the fatigues and embarrassments of life.

The place of their quiet and repose was chiefly under an old wall, or in some vineyard, where, as soon as they awoke, and quenched the little
thirst,

thirst, incident to such opiates, and got in sight of some other village, they flung away the remainder of their wine (of which very little was ever left) and made a fresh entry and attack on all other well disposed charitable christians.

At some intervals, our hero and his old comrade used to converse about the spiritual and temporal advantages to be got by this profession; into the secret of which Bell let him, as the wine made him more or less communicative.

In the first place, he acquainted him with a piece of medical practice he made use of, according to the season of the year, and what part of the kingdom he was in, a practice allowed to be always successful, and not without gain; which was, curing of women of sore breasts, after their lying-in, or preventing them from being so before it, by means of a young whelp of a wolf, which at certain seasons he carried about, in order to draw their breasts; which, as they are very numerous in the mountainous part of Spain, are taken before they can see, or soon after; at which time they differ very little from common puppies, and are kept in boxes like those of our pedlars; every woman to whose breasts these animals are applied, pays the pilgrim half a real of plate, and while the whelp is sucking, has the extraordinary advantage of the bearer's prayers; and indeed our hero found afterwards, that it was an opinion generally received, that cures of an extraordinary nature had been effected by these sort of animals;

especially if the person by whom they were applied, could by any means come under the denomination of a religioso: an application too far fetched, for one, who was quite at the fag end of all kind of spiritualities.

He had another beneficial item belonging to his profession, which was, curing sore eyes, which he pretended to do by his sanative spittle only; and though our hero had often seen children brought to him on that occasion, he never knew how that miraculous operation was brought about; till by an extraordinary portion of claret, he told him, it was effected by his chewing an herb called Staga, which grew out of old monasteries and church-walls, and being incorporated with brown sugar, he spit the juice of it in his patients eyes, which cured them of distempers of that sort.

Another perquisite, and indeed a very considerable one, was, from All-hallows-tide to Christmas, he carried with him a flat dish made of block-tin, in the middle of which were placed little bodies of the same metal; the lower part of them painted red; under the dish was a small pan with brimstone in it, which when set on fire, the flame came into the dish, through a small funnel made for that purpose, and blazed more or less, as the occasion required; this was done in imitation, and to put the spectators in mind of the souls in purgatory; and was called in their language, ‘el expressio d’ las animas;’ upon which occasion the spectators appeared exceedingly devout, and as fervent in
their

their prayers as if the figures were alive, and really in the torment in which they were represented to be; of which our hero was frequently an eye-witness, and a partaker of the fiery fund, which arose from the spectators putting money into the dish, to secure the pilgrim's prayers, for such of their relations or friends as they believed to be in the same condition as the dish represented; and it is difficult to find an instance of any representation whatsoever having such an effect on the standers by, as that, except the carrying a cross about on Good-fridays; a solemnity they are indefatigable in performing; though, on these occasions, such as are imposed on have the least to answer for.

At length, our hero became acquainted with the whole mysteries of the profession; and finding it no bad one, he very industriously inquired of Bell, whether he had not saved a great deal of money by it, from an indisputable maxim, that it is necessary for every man to know upon what plan he may securely lay the foundation of his future pursuits; nor did our hero forget what regard and respect was to be shewn him on such an occasion, putting him, as filially as he could, in mind, that 'he was well stricken in years, and at a full date of life; a tenure, at the beginning, very precarious, but much more so in its declension; and that if by his prudence, which no one could doubt of, he was possessed of any considerable sum of money, he ought, as well for the quiet of his own mind, as the welfare of those,

who were to succeed him in the advantageous use he had made of this troublesome world, to acquaint some person or other where he had deposited his treasure ; adding, how necessary it was to make such a discovery on a religious account ; for that by so doing, a proper part of it might be distributed among the poor, in case he should on a sudden be called to Heaven, where, doubtless, the pious life he had led, had prepared a place for him.'

In answer to this comfortable doctrine, the old fellow used to shrug up his shoulders in an harlequin manner, and assure our hero with a most retentive look, ' that he had often given, as well as received, and that his treasure was in Heaven ;' though to entitle him to any fund there, it is doubted, whether he could make it appear, that he ever gave two pence to any one living : and indeed he would sometimes very mathematically demonstrate, ' that such charity as had been bestowed on him, was to center in his possession ; and that he could not find, that there was any more necessity or use for applying the same money several times to the same purpose, than there was for paying the same debt again when it had been once discharged.'

And the truth was, as our hero thought Bell's life very precarious, and did not know how long he might continue in his retinue, he was willing to make to himself a friend of the mammon of uprightness ; and if he could prevail on him
to

to make him his heir, that he ought to know where his assets lay ; all which he apprehended, were concealed in the leathern collar he wore over his cloak ; and the more so, because he constantly placed it under his head whenever he lay down to sleep.

Our hero and his comrade, after travelling some time together, had got near the borders of France, where the plague was at that time, and from thence forward they were not suffered to enter any town on the confines of it, without producing a bill of health from the place where they lay every night, with which Bell took care to be constantly provided ; and though they were then in Pompolonia, as the distemper raged very much not far from it, Bell told our hero it was impracticable to proceed any further towards France ; and accordingly brought him to a town called Villa-nueva, which was considerably large, and had a Benedictine convent in it, where Bell was lodged ; and our hero, who, on account of his having deserted, did not think proper to make a public appearance oftner than he was obliged to do, was quartered at a Dutchman's, who sold wine in the suburbs of the town.

His landlord had by no means lost his natural propensity to smoaking, drinking, and swearing ; and, except those little foibles, was accounted an honest fellow enough ; he had been a soldier at the siege of Barcelona, and, with the assistance of his wife, who then lived with him, had followed

the futtling trade all the time of the Spanish war; he spoke a little broken English and French and some other languages tolerably well, many of them much easier to be understood than his own.

Our hero, his landlord, and landlady, understood the exercise of a prone of wine, full as well as the military one, and as the two last had been well trained up in the mystery of soldiering, they suspected our hero to have been one of that profession; intimating now and then what sums of money they had lost by gentlemen of that sort, otherwise in what a thriving condition they might have been; but this memorandum was made use of only when our hero had run a little too far in their debt; however, by his paying pretty honestly, by the help of Bell's collections, and his own unwearied diligence in disposing of the fruit of the vine, in which his landlord sometimes shared, their friendship began to increase, especially on his landlady's side, who was an excellent midwife at delivering a big-bellied bottle; and more remarkably so in the absence of her good man; the only appellation she made use of to distinguish him from any one else, when she was in a good humour; for at other times she had as many different names for him as are to be found in a regimental muster-roll; names in the High German or Dutch language, very sonorous and expressive.

In this town there was an officer of the Walloon guards, who had lately come thither to recruit;

cruit; Bell soon became acquainted with him, which was what our hero carefully avoided, being apprized that a great many of those officers were Irish, and by their means he might consequently be brought into the Spanish service again; so that it was with the utmost caution that he ventured into the town at all, Bell making his daily collections in it, and some odd nights lying with our hero at the Dutchman's, especially when he had an inclination to be a little more alert than ordinary, and could retire from public observation; for of all the excesses committed in Spain, there is not one against which there is a greater denunciation than publicly drinking too freely, whatever indulgence may be given to an infirmity of that nature in private.

Though Bell's collections in the town, at the beginning, had been tolerably good, and our hero's not to be complained of in the suburbs, and the last fairly divided between Bell and him, there now appeared a considerable decrease on Bell's side; upon which our hero let him know at a distance, that he suspected that he did not divide the spoil fairly with him, which he was made too sensible of, by being obliged to run so much in debt to his landlord; which hints the wine sometimes raised into plainer indications of distrust; so that their attachments began to cool, Bell's visits were less frequent, and his paternal affection visibly abated;

abated ; in short, he seemed willing to disburthen himself of our hero.

Upon which their landlord, who knew well enough how to make proper observations on such as used his house, made a very learned speech, with divisions, subdivisions, and inferences of great weight : first, as to our hero's security in regard to some debts of a little too long standing : secondly, as to the great intimacy he heard there was between the Walloon officers and Bell : and thirdly, as to his giving any more credit ; concluding with a cautionary, and very natural inference, that very often recruiting officers had most extraordinary views and intelligence ; and that the great familiarity (as he was informed) between Bell and them, could not arise from any regard they could have for him, but rather to some discovery he might be prevailed on to make against our hero.

This was an argument which had very great weight in it, and therefore he examined his landlord a little closer about it, at the same time letting him know, that his obligations to him were so great, especially as to the hint he had given him, and his inclinations so just as to paying him, that if Bell should either leave him, or endeavour to betray him, yet he had wherewith to discharge the debts he owed him, which really he had, remaining out of the smuggler's contribution ; and that his landlord might see that he
was

was in earnest, he paid him down some part of his demand ; requesting him to go immediately and make the best inquiry he could about Bell's behaviour, who had been at that time longer absent from him than he ever remembered him to have been before.

The discharging part of his arrears had its effect ; for both his landlady and her good man marched directly into town on a party of observation ; and as they had almost a general and intimate acquaintance with soldiers of all ranks, they got information at the expence of a prone or two of wine and some snuff, the common perquisites of such sort of secret intelligence, that Bell had informed against him ; and that the officers only waited for an opportunity of taking him up on some other evidence, if possible, than Bell's, whose testimony against him, except in cases of desertion, would have been but conjectural only.

Upon their return home, they furnished him with this account ; adding, that they had seen Bell, since they had left him, in company with one of the serjeants belonging to the recruiting officer, who afterwards inquired of them very strictly about the stranger that lodged at their house.

This, without any annotations on it, was a sufficient caution for our hero to change his lodgings ; which his landlord very honestly advised

vifed him to, affuring him, that he was informed by feveral of the fouldiers, that Bell had been furnifhed with lifting money on this occafion, and, in his cups, unwarily difcovered his intentions of delivering up his recruit to an Irish officer, upon his return from a village not far diftant from Villa nueva, where he had another ferjeant recruiting.

Our hero thanked him very kindly for his information and advice, which he promifed to follow the next morning, and accordingly, while Bell was abfent, bundled up his baggage, which was fmall enough, for a frefh incampment.

Late in the evening his old friend, in company with the very ferjeant his landlord had told him of, came to the Dutchman's, very well freighted with wine, and, to all appearance, well difpofed to drink more : Bell introduced the ferjeant to our hero as his old acquaintance ; and, as an appellation of honour, the ferjeant called Bell our hero's uncle, letting him know, ' how fondly he had expreffed himfelf towards him, which he was fure muft be the only inducement he could have to follow fuch an odd way of life ; well enough indeed for men of his uncle's age and venerable afpect, but for him, who was a ftreight, able, likely young fellow, it was lofing himfelf to all intents and purpofes ; that it was time enough to be a fort of a beggar when he could be fit for nothing elfe ; and God knows, what could a man make of fuch a ridiculous employment ?

ployment? But in the army there were a thousand chances; especially for the Irish, handsome, clever fellows, and remarkable for their bravery.'

It was no difficult matter to see through these notable remarks, and encomiums; but the most complete part of the farce was, Bell's annotations on the serjeant's harangue; he who, not long before, had preached so many excellent discourses on the divinity of his profession, began now to change the system of his doctrine; joining most devoutly with his old acquaintance, 'That his way of life was the most insignificant under the face of the sun; that his function was despised, on account of the many fallacies made use of in it; and that if heaven had thought proper to have inflicted any punishment on him for his sins, other than travelling about the world in the poor way he had done, it would have been a great instance of its mercy towards so forlorn a wretch as he was; and though it was true, that the warfare of the soul was spiritually necessary, yet that of the body was glorious; and the honour arising from dying in the service of one's country was much more to be wished for than the changes of climates, penury, distresses, and the fatiguing exercises of nocturnal devotion at the shrines and monuments of saints and martyrs; and wished most heartily that he had been a soldier instead of a pilgrim.'

All

All which doctrine plainly arose from his having betrayed our hero to the Walloon officer; and consequently put him on his guard, from disputing the reasonableness of it at that time, for fear the serjeant should immediately apprehend him for a deserter, but seemed rather to comply than otherwise; and accordingly drank health to the king of Spain, prosperity to the Walloon guards, and success to all jolly Irishmen; and continued their loyalty and affection till the serjeant found it absolutely necessary to reel home to his quarters; but the old traitor was something stouter, and after his companion had eloped, our hero was forced almost to suffocate himself with a fresh supply of wine, before he could get Bell in a proper attitude for parting with him; at last he tumbled fairly, and his landlord, who, as I said before, was a Dutchman, and well accustomed to these sort of accidents, without any manner of surprise, assisted in carrying him to his bed; where he was deposited without the formality of being undressed.

And that our hero might not have any delay, or interruption in his last offices of kindness to him, he settled his account with his landlord, as well for that night's entertainment (the burden of which fell entirely on him, on account of the indisposition of his fellow-labourers) as the preceding ones, and paid him his demand; and after a parting bottle, took his final leave of him; telling him, he would go quite another way than

he really designed : but before he began his march, he went back to his room to take some little satisfaction of his uncle Bell, whom he found in a fine slumber, with all his harness and accoutrements on him ; and so strong was the opiate he had taken, that he had forgot even to dispose of his leathern cape in the manner he had constantly done at other times.

And all things being hush and quiet, he had a fine opportunity of retalliating the favour his comrade intended him ; one that knew into what servitude and misery he must have brought our hero, had his unnatural designs succeeded ; one that, perhaps for the sake of a dollar only, could find in his heart to betray even a supposed countryman ; so that our hero began his operations on him very mechanically : in the first place he ransacked his breeches pockets, and safely delivered them of as much cash as he conscientiously thought his dividend ; and in the next place stripped him of such of his religious materials as might be necessary for him, should he at any time have grace enough to follow his employment ; and accordingly took out of his side-pocket his tin-box, in which were kept his credentials for being a pilgrim, and some other papers requisite on that occasion.

In Spain it is customary, either in a passport, bill of health, or in any written licence for travelling, to describe the person and features of him they are given to, in doing which no people
are

are more accurate or expressive than the Spaniards ; and some of these sort of papers relative to Bell, had been preserved in his tin-box, and accordingly were secured by our hero.

The next thing he employed himself in was weeding some of the cockle-shells, and little images of St. James, out of his bonnet ; he likewise took the liberty of decollating his patriarch's staff : but that with which he was most careful to furnish himself was his leathern cape, the contents of which he likewise divided, and about twelve o'clock at night took his last farewell of him ; leaving him mighty well composed, and clear of some part of the incumbrances of his money and religious equipage ; nor did he forget to secure what bread and meat had been collected the day before, and filled his own calabash with what wine was left in Bell's ; the first instance perhaps of any thing of that kind being so long on draught, where such customers were to be had.

The last caution he made use of was to lock the door on him, and take away the key, though possibly he might not have stirred till noon the next day, at which time he might have exercised his lungs till he had died for want of respiration, without being heard by any one in the family, who were all at a considerable distance from his dormitory.

It

It was very lucky for him that he was quartered without the walls of the town, otherwise he could never have left it by night, the gates being always locked at that time; but being at full liberty for flight, he no sooner had got clear of the houses, but he ran as expeditiously as if Bell's ghost was in pursuit of him; and in that agility of body he continued all the remaining part of that night, now and then dropping a cockle-shell or two, and some of his little helpless St. James's, which in some time after he found were considerably decreased in weight and number.

The next day he slept in the vault of an old church-yard, in company with a great many peaceable carcases, without the terrible consequences that attended his civility on another occasion at Colnbrook. All the night following he travelled again, and so successively for four nights, concealing, with great caution, every thing that had the look of a pilgrim's dress; though there was not the most absolute occasion for it, on account of the soporiferous dose the old fellow had taken, and the caution our hero had used to prevent his landlord's knowing what road he intended to take.

At the end of the fourth day, he began to congratulate himself on his escape, and could not help smiling at the thoughts of his being pretty even with the recruiting pilgrim; who might have been safe in his money and utensils, without the loss of a single shell, had he not first broke faith with him; and have failed quietly on his voyage to heaven, if his pilgrim's

I

compass

compass could have been of service to him in the steerage.

And now thinking it high time to inquire into his booty, he sat himself down very composedly, and began to consider what would become of Bell, in regard to his wanting the papers in his tin-box, which was his greatest loss, he being plentifully supplied with expedients to relieve himself in every other instance, by his ingenuity, and great depth of understanding in his trade: but at length, being satisfied, that no one would dispute his authority on account of the venerableness of his beard and countenance, nor his profession by the fragments which were left with him of his dress, he moderated his concern for him; and summing up the whole evidence for and against himself, he determined to be at no further trouble about him, whatever he might be in regard to his effects.

Our hero's proportion of the temporalities contained in his breeches pockets, amounted to no more than eleven reals of plate, a pouch of tobacco with a short brass pipe in it, and a paper of snuff; and of his spiritualities, he got an old crucifix, a leathern bag full of relicks, and some loose nostrums that wanted more judgment than he had to explain them: but, to his great comfort, his leathern cape, for which he had, by instinct, so great a veneration, supplied him with about fifteen pounds, which as soon as he had counted, he carefully concealed in the upper part of the cape of his cloak, in a piece of leather of the same size and form with that of Bell's.

So

So much money, and his being so well versed in the trade it was got by, put our hero into good plight; and he fancied the spirit of pilgrimage rested on him, and so most devoutly determined to follow it.

For three weeks he had very little conversation with any one, except by night; at which time he constantly made use of some little remote houses, where his education under Bell furnished him with materials proper for such as inhabited them; upon many of whom a miraculous story operated so strongly, that he got his supper upon opening his mouth; and had it not been for his contempt of money, might sometimes have had half their possessions before he shut it; an undeniable testimony of the power of superstition.

After some time, he began to travel more publickly, and discover, gradually, the ensigns of his function: in the first place, he supplied himself with a long stick, and fixing the carved head that formerly belonged to Bell's on it, from a plain, downright honest piece of ash, it was at once converted into a patriarch's staff.

Now and then he sewed a cockle-shell in his bonnet, and some of his little innocent St. James's on the cape of his cloak, not thinking it prudent to blaze out in all his dress at once: but alas! before he could make the pious uses he designed of his calling, contrary to the old maxim, "*Pœna pede sequitur claudo*," punishment follows with a lame foot, it was quick at his heels; for, in a few days, he lost the cape of his cloak, and with it most of the money.

This misfortune was occasioned by the influence of much such another soporiferous dose, and by the same hands as that which was administered to his old comrade Bell, which laid him in a trance for four and twenty hours; by which means he quite forgot his cape of maintenance, his steward and purse-bearer, the ever-to-be-lamented cape of his cloak! and though he flew on the wings of hope and despair to the place of his repose, in search for it, it was all to no purpose; gone it was, and the loss most insupportable, had it not been that he had philosophy enough to make it of some use to himself, by determining never afterwards to concern himself with any thing but what was directly his own; or, if he did, to take more care of it.

Nor was the loss of the money his only mortification: the consideration of the gloomy prospect he had of the many difficulties he must go through for want of such a passport as the piece of furniture he lost would have been, quite disconcerted him; but being trained up so long in misfortunes, he was fully determined to proceed on his pilgrimage, let the consequences be what they would; and so, dressing himself in the remaining part of his furniture, and combing his beard, which was then grown to some length, and contracting his countenance from its natural risibility into a very unnatural demureness, he began his journey.

He was at that time in a very proper part of the country for such an undertaking, being in the mountains between France and Spain, where
he

he could play at small games only, having neither wolf nor purgatory-dish; the last of which was probably left by Bell at the benedictine convent, to the brethren of which it was bequeathed as a legacy, where, possibly, by their natural propensity to charity, his losses were afterwards in some manner repaired, while our hero had no insurance-office to apply to.

However, though part of his implements were wanting, as to the sanative science in general, yet he undertook to cure sore eyes with some of the same ingredients, and perhaps with as much success as Bell had done; but more particularly children's eyes, with a composition of sorrel, brown sugar, and some of his own spittle: though he has told me that those sort of distempers were generally hereditary, and required mercury more than any chymical preparation of his; for want of a sufficient quantity of which, their parents had entailed them on their children, the only fee-farm inheritance many of them had.

He kept as little company as he could with any persons, except such from whose dress and appearance he was in no danger of being discovered, in regard to his being a pretender only to so pious an order: and for their edification he was constantly giving some astonishing accounts or other, of the miracles and relicks he had seen, with a full and ample description of countries and people, which neither the relater or any one else had ever heard of before; but more particularly of Ireland, and of the great progress of the roman catholick religion there; for the sake of which, and the good of his soul,

he had taken on him the order of a pilgrim : by which he got as good entertainment, and probably as much money as his predecessor had done ; the natives of Spain in general, but more especially in the remote parts of it, being very credulous in matters of religion, and of consequence easily imposed on ; so that he had not much trouble in convincing them of the necessity and peculiar merit of charity bestowed on men of his function, who were living volumes of history, undoubted relaters of all that had been seen, and faithful evidences of what was to be believed. But as obscure a part of the world as our hero was then in, yet he narrowly escaped with his life at a serenade in it, which is a very common entertainment in most parts of Spain ; and is accounted a great performance, though the company that attend it make such a sort of figure as is represented in the immortal Hudibras, at Tulla's musical entertainment by Crowdero.

The chief on this occasion accompanied by a great number of young men, with guitars, jews-trumps, castanets, and a small pipe and tabor, either on a summer's night, or by moonlight in the winter, dances what they call a scaramouch ; and the place made use of for this extraordinary piece of agility is under his mistress's window ; he at the same time singing, or indeed howling, what in that country is called a Tonnodella, at the end of which his companions set up a shout, much like that of the Turks at the beginning of a battle.

This serenade was made in honour of one of the daughters of the men of the house where
our

our hero lodged, who was the school-master of the village; the principal person in the serenade, was son to some person of credit in the neighbourhood, but not being satisfied with shewing his dexterity without doors, he very haughtily demanded admission into the poor man's house: this was what his landlord would not upon any account assent to, though not altogether unreasonable, as it rained very heavily; but jealousy, the evil genius of that nation, had bolted the door, and Don Ferdinando was to remain without, as wet as a piece of brown paper would have been on the like occasion, and much of the same colour: at length the door was burst open, and the poor man stabbed with a poniard; which infallibly would have been our hero's lot, had not some of the serenaders observed his pilgrim's dress; though to initiate him into his spiritual warfare, he got a considerable beating, before his accoutrements made their appearance, notwithstanding he deserved an earlier protection from them, on account of the sanctified uses he intended applying them to; however, upon a proper view, a strict charge was given that he should not be molested any more. The poor man died before morning, to our hero's great concern, on account of his distressed family, as well as the civility he had received from him; and to signify his zeal for his recovery, he prayed most heartily for him while alive, and for his departed soul afterwards, in conjunction with the priest, who had given him extreme unction; and the more so on remembering how narrowly he had escaped the same fate, not with-

out some marks which did not belong to his function.

The escape of the murderer, and the sanction he got in the parish church, which was near the house where the fact was committed, gave our hero an unalterable aversion to all allowances of that nature; which shew, that the commands of God, in regard to that most heinous crime, were less observed than the innovations of men; and the reflection on such an instance of cruelty, made him determine to leave so lawless and inhuman a part of the world, and not to be concerned in haste again in such a piece of gallantry; a more minute description of which, will probably not be unacceptable to the reader.

The chief person in the ferenade was a long-sided fellow, with lank hair reaching down to the waist-band of his breeches: he wore a linen cap on his head made in the form of a beehive, turned up in the front with a piece of red silk, with a plume of feathers on the top of it: he had no other cloaths on than a jacket and breeches, the last in the shape of a pair of trousers, with his stockings, which were red, tied below his knees with a large bunch of ribbands, and a pair of pumps on as thin as if they had been made of parchment, to each of which were fixed a pair of small wings, the representatives, it is presumed, of those of Mercury; and, to conceal a countenance, which in truth ought never to have been exposed, he had a mask on, with a nose and mouth about six inches long and wide, little inferior to those nature had most munificently bestowed on him.

The

The fellow, who played on the guittar, held in his hand a long pole, at the end of which was fixed a fox's tail, and whenever the principal was taken with an extraordinary agitation for dancing, the musick-master made a circle with his pole, and the dancer first stretching out one leg and then the other, with the same sort of solemnity, as it is handed down by undeniable authority, lions have done on being let out of their cages, he began his movements; in which he continued capering, leaping and hallooing, till, for want of breath, he could proceed no farther; the tabor, pipe, castanets and guittar making all the while a concert of all the dissonants in musick, and not one of the spectators but at the same time was frisking and exercising his body, in the same manner as is related of persons under cure for a Tarantula; and to give a finishing period to the whole, the face of the person who played on the castanets was blackened, on purpose, one would imagine, to shew that the devil understood that sort of musick in former times; which indeed none but such as had received their instructions from a master of that sort could do at that famous interlude, or any other of the same nature since.

From this extraordinary country and entertainment our hero travelled till he came into a little town, in which, by its appearance, he did not expect to meet with either guard or soldier; but as soon as he had got within it, he was challenged by a man who looked more like one that was mad than a centinel: he was in his waistcoat, under which was a ragged coarse shirt, his open-knee'd breeches reached quite down to

the middle of his legs, which were otherwise bare; and, instead of shoes, he had on a pair of hempen sandals: his hair was platted in two divisions, and his head covered with a broad-brimmed bonnet, on the left side of which was sewed a large tuft of red feathers; his whiskers were curled half way up his nose, and so plastered with snuff that it was impossible to distinguish his nostrils, and in his hand he had a long spado ready drawn: but to alleviate the terror such an appearance must put all strange and unwary spectators into, he placed a jews-trump between his teeth, on which he played most melodiously; and our hero having some hopes from so arch and pacific a part of his appearance, stepped up very courageously to him, upon which he collected himself at once into the posture of a knight-errant, and withdrawing the musical instrument from his mouth, he gave a twist to his mustachoes, and very sternly demanded from whence he came, and where he was going. But however terrible most part of the fellow's aspect was, our hero was by no means willing to give up the respect and regard he had so often experienced by his function; and so, with as little concern, and as much disdain as he could muster up, he told him, "That he was a pilgrim, and according to his office was travelling about the world for the instruction and benefit of mankind in general, but more particularly for those of his profession; and let him know, that he and they differed only in the denomination of their functions, our hero's being a spiritual warfare, and their's a temporal one;" being very willing to enter into a discourse with him, tho' offici-

officially enough, on any subject that might reduce him to shew some sort of respect to the appearance he made.

But all his rhetorick was lost, and had no more effect on his savage inattention, than if it had been applied to the wind; but, giving a flourish with his spado, and a toss with his head, he peremptorily demanded our hero's passport and bill of health; which, as it was a considerable time since he had left Bell, and no credentials having from that time been demanded of him, he had quite forgot the necessity he was under of having them renewed: but now, being terrified into a proper recollection, he apprehended inevitable ruin, unless he could, by some means or other, impose on the credulity of the fellow who appeared as a centinel; the oddness and poverty of whose dress and figure gave him some hopes that he should succeed; so that as a supplement to his former conversation with him, he added, "That men of his profession were not obliged to comply with formalities of any sort; nor was it ever known, that any person who had taken a religious habit on him, was to be called to an account where or to whom he was going; for that the vestment of a pilgrim was his passport to every corner of this troublesome world, and hereafter his credentials for being admitted into a much better; and as to bills of health, they might, in general, be a preservative against infections, but that it was never heard, that any one of his profession either received or communicated any thing of that sort; but, on the contrary, have often had

I 6

the

the power of healing the sick, and sometimes raising the dead."

Our hero was no more a gainer by the codicil of his arguments, than he was by the beginning; and to put an end to all his rhetoric, the fellow told him very bluffly, ' That he was one of the militia-guard, and must and would be obeyed; and that he should go directly with him to the alcadee, or governor, who he said was the captain of the guard which he belonged to."

At last our hero offered him his prayers, and what he thought full as substantial for so poor a wretch, some money; and, as an assuager, drank now and then to him out of his calabash, but all to no purpose; for, after the third godown, he began to be morose and surly to the last degree; and in return for all the prayers, money, benedictions and wine that were bestowed on him, cursed and swore in a most uncatholic manner, that he would not wait a moment longer; so that he was obliged, very unwillingly, to have his attendance to the guard-room; where our hero observed, they were all in the same uniform, particularly as to the feathers in their caps; and such a figure they made with a tabor and pipe instead of a drum, a few old match-lock guns, and some rusty spado's, as were hardly to be found among the remotest Indians.

Their language was a mere jargon; between Spanish and French; however, notwithstanding those appearances of ignorance and poverty, their inquiry went on very strictly about our
hero,

hero, and were all unanimous, upon their comrade's relating what application and offers he had made to him, that there must be some mystery in what he had said and done; and accordingly, after his lodgment some little time with them, he was exhibited to the governor, who was much of the same complexion with themselves, but distinguishably their superior in having a coat and cloak on, with a linen ruff about his neck, and a band of the same, pasted on a square piece of band-box, with a pair of the most terrible whiskers that ever sat in judgment. The alcadee made no other inquiries, or put himself to any other trouble more than demanding his bill of health, which he not being able to produce, orders were given, that he should be sent directly under a guard of his raggamuffins, to a town at about a league's distance, called Olite, where there was a governor and a regular guard; and the reason of his being sent thither with such expedition, and without further questions, was, that his honour had no power to capitulate on such occasions, nor authority to act any otherwise than as an officer to intercept such as were suspected to be illicit travellers, on account of the plague; and those he was to transmit forthwith to the governor, before whom our hero was brought on that occasion.

On his road to Olite he was under most insupportable dejection, arraigning Bell's baseness and infidelity, which were the occasion of his resort to such a dress and way of life; and heartily wishing to have been divested of his robes, which he would most thankfully have exchanged for the poorest suit of regimentals, in the
worst

worst of services : at last, quite stupified at the consequences of his being detected as an impostor, he was brought by this surprizing retinue to Olite, and by them delivered over to the guard at the entrance of the town, and from thence sent with a file of musqueteers to the main-guard about noon ; where he found the officer and the rest of the men, except such as were centinels, asleep ; it being customary in Spain to take a nap at that time of the day : as soon as the serjeant and the rest of the guard had opened their eyes, there was a general inspection made of our hero, all waiting till the serjeant had made his inquiries, which he did with surprizing exactness, but seemed to be at a great loss to know on what account a person in his dress could be taken into custody ; and being a very old man, and not a little superstitious, he seemed to use his prisoner with an uncommon respect and awe, which is generally the consequence of such a failing.

As to the rest of the guard, our hero had something else to think of, than to answer the impertinent questions they had to ask ; and refusing to give them any reply at all, the serjeant marched off with him to his officer, with whom he had a great deal of discourse, especially in regard to his travels, which he managed for his own benefit as well as he then was able ; though his politicks were truly at a very low ebb.

The officer told him, that he was brought prisoner thither for travelling without a bill of health, which he assured him was a very bad circumstance ; and seemed particularly inquisitive how long he had been a pilgrim ; but, probably he

he was unacquainted with the ceremonies which are performed previous to an admission into that order, by his not inquiring for his credentials or passport from St. Jago; things, which to his utter confusion, were soon to be inspected by much abler examiners.

After the officer had finished his discourse with him, he was remanded to the guard-room, where a great croud of people were waiting to take a second view of him, the account of his being an impostor having taken wind. He over-heard many of them whispering, that they believed he was a cheat; the most shocking appellation they could have bestowed on him: at length the officer ordered a serjeant with a file of six men to march with him to the governor, our hero being placed in the centre of them with their bayonets fixed; where he walked conformably to the natural gravity of that nation on such unfortunate occasions, though with much more confusion; neither prayer, cure, or miracle being then of force to relieve him. He had as perfect a representation of the inquisition as if he had heard the sentence of Auto del Fe read against him, and suspected every one he met with in orders, to be the inquisitor-general; and would willingly have commuted for a chain and pair of oars on board one of his most catholick majesty's gallies for life, rather than have stood a trial of such terrible consequences.

At last he arrived, self-condemned, at his excellency's, where after waiting some time below stairs, he was ordered up into a large room; in which the first thing that presented itself to his view was a tawny fellow, with eyes of an horrid

rid intuitive squint, almost sunk into his head; he had a large band on, and was sitting, with pen, ink and paper, before him, ready for engrossing examinations, confessions, and cross-examinations, with all and singular their appurtenances, and made just such a figure as the ingenious Whaccum is related to have done, differing only in this, that the first was to record the fortune of our hero's life, and the other only what might be the issue of a love-fit.

Then it was that the great capacity of Morgan, formerly his fellow-clerk, came into his mind, who had been a proctor of the ecclesiastical court, as well as a solicitor in all other sort of causes; he remembered how dexterous his companion had been at a libel, how keen at an answer, how close he would stick to a replication, how deeply he had been read in matters peremptory and exceptive, and how, above all men of the profession, he had the irresistible power of obtaining or refuting an interlocutory or definitive sentence. But alas! all his abilities could then be of no service to him; he had no court of appeal to award off his sentence, nor court of delegates to reverse it.

Thus stationed, and almost ready to sink into the earth, stood our hero; to whom that devil of an amanuensis never once opened his mouth, but viewed him with so penetrating and oblique a cast, that he was sure he was to be condemned on sight; to prevent which, he had just begun to make his defence, when, on a sudden, his excellency the governor, and his retinue made their appearance, such a one as the most innocent person could hardly abide, much less one
whose

whose transgressions stared him full in the face.

The whole tribunal consisted of about eight persons, all of them, except the governor and his ill-favoured register, in clergymens habits : his judges being seated in their proper order, he, the poor unhappy culprit, made his dejected appearance ; and probably the governor having been previously acquainted with the charge against him, without any questions, ordered his pockets to be searched ; and the soldier, to whom that office was allotted, did it very judiciously ; for, observing him to be in the utmost confusion, he not only took out of his pockets his old friend Bell's tin-box, but all the cash our hero had, with so much industry, got together ; and without hesitation, and doubtless with as little remorse as it was acquired, detained the sum total, as his perquisite ; whispering, at the same time he was making him a bankrupt, " Not to be cast down ; for that the gentlemen in whose presence he was, were the most charitable christians in the world ; and that what little trifles he had secured, besides the tin-box, should be safely deposited for his use ; " though he never heard any thing afterwards of them, nor had he the thought or resolution of complaining ; which he forgot to do, on account of the circumstances he was then under.

As soon as he was delivered of the burthen of his money, the governor ordered the papers to be taken out of his tin-box, which by the help of a most unwarrantable pair of spectacles, he read very carefully ; and after he had perused them as long as he thought convenient, ordered them

them to be delivered to the scribe ; who, though our hero complained of his taciturnity at their first interview, proclaimed the unfortunate contents of them, with as much strength of lungs, and as audible a voice as if he had been the town-cryer.

While the papers were reading, our hero observed the governor fixing his eyes, in a very particular manner, on him, at the end of several of the sentences, especially when the amanuensis came to the descriptive part of the person mentioned in the passports.

All the papers being distinctly read, the governor rose up in an hurry, and twisting his whiskers, with as much resentment as if some one had plucked them, demanded if he had any other passports or bills of health, under some terrible appellations which he could not perfectly understand. Our hero told him (though he was scarce able to say so much) “ That he did not know it was necessary for men of his profession to carry them always about ; and that he hoped his excellency’s natural propensity to goodness and charity, which he was informed were very extensive, would not suffer him to exercise his power on a poor unhappy stranger, the omission of whose duty was occasioned through ignorance only ; and humbly intreated the rest of the venerable society, if that was the substance of his crime, which surely it must, that they would intercede with his excellency in his behalf.” He was going on with his rhetorical intercession, when at once he was ordered a peremptory and dogmatical silence : and I have heard him say, it was the most profound
one

one he was ever in before or since ; and being thus metamorphosed into a mute, the governor asked him in a gibing manner, and with the stile and title of Seignior Pelegrino, " How many years old may you be ? " Our hero answered, about thirty ; " Then, says he, you are now much younger than you was twenty years ago ; and your beard has changed its colour in a most unnatural manner ; for I find by the description in the papers you carried about, that it was long since grey ; you have shrunk strangely too in your height, and are very near a foot shorter than you was, nor can I perceive any mole in your cheek ; " which was one of the descriptions of Bell in his passport ; and with the rest, was exactly true ; for Bell was considerably more than six feet high, and had a large, hairy mole on his left cheek, with a long, grey beard ; the mirrour of his emission.

At these questions and observations our hero was struck speechless, and he thought the fire of the inquisition had taken hold of his coat ; and so was neither able to answer, confess, or deny, all, or any thing in the charge exhibited against him : upon which the governor, in a most violent heat and passion, called him impostor, thief, Jew and heretic ; to the confirmation of which terrible sentences, he observed, one of the ecclesiastics irritated him most fervently ; the first of that order, who had not been, on his application, at some time or other, instrumental in serving him.

At the end of these anathemas, far worse than all the ecclesiastical denunciations in, or
since

Since the reign of king Henry the eighth, the serjeant was ordered to convey our hero to gaol; and accordingly, through the flouts, kicks, cuffs, and plucks of his beard, by half the rabble that followed him from the governor's, he was hurried into a dungeon; which, according to our hero's description of it, was the most dismal, upon, or under the earth: it had a small crevice only in it, through which he could but barely distinguish the day from the night; what he had to lie on was an handful of chopped straw, full of all sorts of vermin; and the floor on which it lay, was wet and dirty, and a perfect burrow of rats; in which he had not been locked up by the turnkey above an hour, when the gaoler, whose face had the breach of all the commandments in it, came down to him, and ushering his turnkey in with a pair of fetters, at his service, of so great a weight that the fellow could hardly lift them, swore a thousand oaths, that he ought to have one on every limb; at the same time telling him, he was sure, by his looks, he was such a poor villain, that he had not wherewith to lighten them: and certainly there must have been a little foreknowledge mixed with his cruelty; for the soldier who had searched him, did not leave him even Belisarius's request, an obolum.

Our hero understood the gaoler's meaning well enough, and accordingly stripped off his cloak, and, with great resignation, laid it at his feet: his cloak, poor indeed! divested of its cockle-shells and little images; which, doubtless, with the tin-box, were secured at the governor's, for evidences against him, at some other

other time : and though it was all the cover he had, instead of blankets, the remorseless villain took it away ; and the turnkey followed his example, by snatching off his bonnet ; for which he got no consideration, unless the cloak prevailed on the gaoler not to add more weight to those he had already felt.

He was almost starved to death in a few days ; being absolutely neglected, even as to bread and water, quite bereft of all conversation, and without the least appearance of such brotherly assistance as he formerly received from his fellow-companion in the stocks at St. Jago ; which, and the want of company, put him in mind of the truth of a line he had often repeated to his master, *Solamen est miseris socios habuisse doloris* ; i. e. " It is comfortable to have a companion in misfortunes." Such was the misery of his condition, that to preserve himself as well as he could from the intolerable punishment of musketoes and bugs, he was obliged, in order to keep them from settling on him, to walk, though in irons, almost the whole night about the dungeon ; and when he was so tired that he was forced to lie down, he covered his hands and face with his waistcoat, and plastered his legs with clay, mixed with the water which they were sometimes so charitable as to bring him to drink.

In this condition he continued about a month, crying daily at the crevice in the wall, as loud as he could, for Charity to a poor stranger, good, compassionate christians, take pity on a friendless, hopeless, helpless foreigner. Great numbers came in derision to the crevice, and spit

spit tobacco through it into his face, telling him, they hoped soon to see him burned by an order from the inquisition; a word in which was included all the horrors of misery; and what still enhanced his affliction was, that the cause of his being sent to gaol was the very reason why no sort of people would extend their charity, or shew the least compassion for him; upon which account, he was really brought to his prayers, without making a trafficking use of them; and how little regard soever he might have shewed to the representatives of St. James, he would have been very glad to have had him really a tutelar saint then: in short, his distress was so exquisitely great, that a perfect and intimate description of it, wou'd shock an heart of the most relentless composition; yet he was so employed in thinking, what method he should take to acquit himself, and what excuse he should frame for assuming the garb of a pilgrim, that he did not immediately feel all the weight of such a confinement; for, in the utmost distress, either for want of bread or sleep, his imaginations were employed in his defence; and though he was under no great apprehensions that the manner of his getting the pilgrim's credentials could be discovered, yet it was an inexpressible concern to him, that he did not know how to make it appear, that he had any right to the use of them at all.

At length he determined to plead, that the old man described by the papers in the tin-box, was his uncle; but that dying lately on his travels, and he having accompanied him with an intent to take upon him the same religious order,

order, had possessed himself of what belonged to him, as was the custom in his country, on being the next relation to the deceased; and among the rest of his effects, his habit and papers; and thought that of consequence he had a right to make the same use of them as his uncle had formerly done.

In about a month's time, upon our hero's bawling out of the crevice of the wall louder than usual, that he was dying, and wanted a confessor to disburthen his conscience to, a priest, who was accidentally passing by, came to the gaol, and asking who it was that asked so earnestly for confession, our hero made answer that he was the person, and humbly implored his reverence to assist him in the last moments of his life; which, though it was an office undoubtedly of the utmost consequence, he could not ask him to perform, in a place so very miserable as that in which he was ending his life; and begged of him, to prevent all interruption in his ghostly advice, that he would order him, for some few minutes, into some other part of the goal, where he might, with safety to his reverence's health, confess the sins of his past life: the reason for his more than ordinarily pressing this favour was, that the priest's having a full view of the horrid condition he was in; which he could not have had in the dungeon, might more effectually move him to compassion.

His father-confessor complied with his request; and accordingly, the gaoler, whose face he had not seen from the time he took away his cloak, by his orders, brought him up stairs into an apartment, where was seated a venerable

rabble old priest, who, by his dress, he guessed to be of a superior order; and who, clapping on his spectacles, took a very distinct view of him; and, by his now and then giving a sigh, discovered, that he was greatly shocked at the wretched figure he made: bidding the cannibal of a gaoler withdraw, he shut the door; and then asked our hero, in a tone and words, expressive of great humanity, what it was he wanted with him.

Upon which he represented his case to him as movingly as he possibly could, letting him know, "That the person who implored this last part of his office from him, was the most unhappy creature on earth; one that was not only immersed in too many real crimes, but lay under the terrible imputation of an impostor, in regard to a profession and habit, mankind in general had a great regard for."

The priest who seemed to be much affected with this part of the story, told him, "That he came in charity to his soul, to do the most salutary part of his office; and was willing to receive the confession of every one that penitently and devoutly desired to make it; but that he apprehended, that the crime he was charged with (which the gaoler had informed him of) was in its nature so heinous, that it would require the most candid and open confession; and from the result of it, possibly a longer time than he imagined for absolution: a crime of which if he was really guilty, was of the most dangerous and destructive consequence, by imposing on the credulity of well-disposed christians; and, without authority making

ing

ing an unwarrantable use of a calling, sacred to such persons only as had by fasting and prayer, or other meritorious acts of devotion, obtained the power and gifts belonging to it; and who had the privilege and advantage appropriated to them, of viewing and relating things worthy of the admiration of the whole christian world."

Though this part of the priest's doctrine was laid down with great force and emphasis, it was neither the kind of doctrine, nor assistance our hero wanted; but his intention was to counterfeit himself to be in such a desperate condition, as would not only require confession, but on one well-concerted, to get absolution both from the priest and governor; and in reality he had no occasion for using any fallacy at all, for being quite spent with fasting, and so long close confined, the open air had such an effect on him, that within a few moments after their conversation was ended, he fell down as if he was dead in reality.

The priest sat by him till he recovered a little, and then telling him that he believed his time in this world was but short, and ordering the room to be cleared of the spectators who came in while he was in the fit, bad him proceed to his confession; to the execution of which pious command he was by no means a stranger; and relying upon the instructions he had long before learned on that occasion, he began to recount such offences as he thought were not of too large a size; as, some little transient amours, too much flexibility to mirth and good company, gaming, the root of covetousness, and the unprofitable sin of swearing; besides a long
K detail

detail of omissions; particularly the neglect of devotion, and too often, a disregard to men of his exalted order and piety; with these he blended some good acts he ought to have done, especially those of charity; not forgetting the merit of his being a true catholick apostolick Roman; but of all the accusations in the infamous calendar of offences, he had been instructed not to saddle himself with any one that demanded restitution; a fund of expiation that the poorer sort of delinquents are seldom acquainted with: but our hero took care to be very particular in that part of his confession which related to the manner and occasion of his becoming a pilgrim; which was exactly conformable to the defence he had invented in the gaol, and has been already related; with the additional information only, that he was so much in awe of the governor, and in such dread of his anger, that he was quite incapable of representing his case to him properly, which he humbly begged the priest to acquaint his excellency with; especially as he could not but out of charity give credit to a confession made at such a time, and in such circumstances.

Upon the conclusion of this harangue and request, our hero (having learned the art of physiognomy) looked very sharply at his father-confessor, to observe if there was any alteration in his countenance, from whence he might collect, whether his confession would be of any service to him or not; which he was soon convinced it would; for the good old father apprehending that he had not long to live, and thinking his circumstances and appearance to be

be of so extraordinary a nature, called the gaoler to him, and ordered him to be taken care of in some better way than he had before been, till he heard from or saw him again; and observed, that at the same time, he furnished the gaoler with some money: but before he left him, he re-examined him, in regard to the pilgrim's credentials and habit; which was an inquiry our hero would very readily have dispensed with. He put very sharp questions to him, especially as to the want of his passport and bill of health, which he had not made any part of his confession, telling him, "it was hardly probable, that he did not know, or that he could forget the necessity he must be under for them; especially as it was impossible but that he must have been acquainted with what use they had been to his uncle; and although he had no information of the plague's being in France, yet he could not be ignorant, how necessary it was to have a passport for travelling, at any time, twenty leagues only."

In answer to which our hero told him, he had not been long enough with the good man, his uncle, to be privy to his transactions; and that whenever he applied for any thing, relating either to his order, method of travelling, admission into convents, or came before any magistrate, he was not suffered to be present at such interview; so that of course he must be a stranger to the consequences; and repeated his insinuations, that it was through ignorance only by which he had been brought into such an unhappy dilemma; complaining bitterly of the hardships with which he had been

treated, and with more warmth than he began his complaints at first; depending a good deal on the charitable disposition of the person he was conversing with.

He then begged to be supplied with pen, ink and paper, in order to set forth the state of his case in Latin; letting the priest know, that he had been educated, he once hoped, for far better purposes than those that at present represented themselves to him.

This weighed greatly with him; and that he might know whether he was able to make a proper use of his writing utensils, he began to converse with him in Latin; a conversation, which had not our hero been indifferently well accustomed to in their pronounciation, he must have been at a loss to have carried on; but from thence-forward they continued chiefly in that dialect: in which our hero most carefully represented to him, that he had left his country on account of his religion, and that instead of the troubles he had met with, he hoped to have had a full enjoyment of it in Spain: this kind of information seemed to affect him to a very great degree, and with a very fatherly countenance, he desired our hero not to be dejected; and going away, promised to be with him in two or three days again.

It is very true, at this time, he polished the little rhetoric his master had taught him, as bright as he could; and upon this trying emergency, used all the finesse and art he was master of, and professed so much innocence to bring the father-confessor to a temper of mind proper on such an occasion, that it may be questioned, whether

whether a jesuit emissary could have laid his persuasions more attractively together, or have used stronger arguments for conviction.

And here possibly objections will be raised against the stratagems he made use of, and the method he proceeded in, to deceive one of so humane a disposition as the good old priest was; but if such as are of that opinion would but consider the condition he was in, the imprisonment and punishments he had undergone, that he was then in an enemy's country, and what must inevitably have been the consequences of a discovery being made of what mere self-preservation had induced him to do, they, in all probability would have gone the same lengths, at least; otherwise they must have lost all sense of the inconceivable pleasure of being restored to one's religion, country, and relations; which were the very views he had, and the reason for every act he did, and the means he made use of for those purposes.

But to return to our hero, who had not time enough to make proper conclusions on the priest's visit, before he was interrupted by the gaoler, who probably having had some conversation with the father about him, came to him, quite altered as to the austerity of his countenance, and brutality of his behaviour; and, in the most hypocritical cant, told him, "That it was whispered about, that he had been terribly used, in regard to the accusation against him; and that the people began to think, that the governor had exercised his power very cruelly; and what might be the consequences he could not tell, if such as had any power in the church should

take it into their heads to stand by him; who, he was thoroughly convinced, was as good a Roman-catholick as the best governor of them all; and perhaps a better one than the son of a mongrel Frenchman (alluding to the governor's father, who was a native of France) declaring, that on his conscience, he knew he was a right sort of a pilgrim from the beginning, but having received stricter orders than usual as to his confinement, he had no opportunity till then of shewing his natural clemency; but from thenceforward, though he was a gaoler, he should find that he had not the severity of one; and told him, care should be taken for his being provided with sufficient diet, and better accommodations for the time to come; and that the priest who had been with him was an Italian, remarkable for his goodness and charity, and one who had great interest with the governor; and that the priest's name was Don Juan Vorrails."

This declaration, and all its embellishments, though our hero knew to be mere cant, was not dissatisfactory, nor was he at a loss to guess from whence this brute of a gaoler had extracted so much humanity; and putting on a countenance of assent to all he had said, and a voice of thankfulness for all he had promised, he reminded him of his cloak, telling him how much he wanted it; and "that he saw before him a poor wretch, in a waistcoat and breeches only, (which was really all the covering he had) and on that account, together with his having heard how inhumanly he had been treated, and that he was so well satisfied of his innocence, that
he

he would restore his cloak to him again." Upon which he let fly a complete volley of oaths, to persuade our hero that he had sent it back to him by the turnkey the very next day after he had borrowed it; and that he never saw, or so much as once thought of it, afterwards; though our hero saw it on him the first day the priest paid him a visit. He then very modestly asked for the turnkey, on whom he bestowed his usual complement of curses; telling him, "he hoped that he would be hanged, for that he had robbed him of things of much more value than an old thread-bare cloak;" which was all the account he could get at that time, relating either to that or his bonnet, being afraid to make any farther inquiries about them, and if he had, it is to be supposed, he must have been a very indifferent gaoler, that could not make a more extensive affidavit than a poor pilgrim.

The gaoler, in pursuance of the promise he made our hero at the time the priest left him, suffered him to remain in the upper part of the prison, where he was left to his study, and the framing a Latin petition to the governor; which his frequent whippings at Byshop-Stortford had enabled him to do tolerably well. In the preamble of which he set forth, that he had a scholastick education, and acquired such an additional fund of learning from their colleges and charitable seminaries of instruction, that he long since hoped to have been put into holy orders, instead of suffering in the manner he had done; with a repetition of what he had said to his ghostly father before, adhering strongly to that

part of it in which he set forth the awe he was in at the time of his examination before his excellency, whose presence must command the profoundest respect, from all who have the honour of approaching it; together with his want of understanding properly the language of that nation, which he hoped that he had in some manner remedied, by the plain and authentick account he had given of himself in another; concluding with the prayers of a poor foreigner for his excellency's eternal welfare.

About four days after the good father had left him, he paid him another visit, and gave him such a reception, as, at first sight he could perceive gleams of hope from; and being called aside by the gaoler's wife to put on a shirt, a pair of stockings and shoes (doubtless the gift of the charitable priest) he returned to his benefactor, full of expectations from the good offices he hoped for from him.

The priest began his discourse with him on the merit and reward of suffering with patience, telling him, "That afflictions had all their weight and uses, but particularly those on a religious account; and that persecutions and imprisonment, which took their rise from them, were the true stamps and marks of a christian, and his never-failing token of admission into heaven:" among these comfortable assurances, now and then making use of the appellations of Son, and Child; from whence it was easy to conjecture that the face of affairs was changed, and his deliverance at hand; which after some few questions that did not occur to him on the former visit, he told him he was in hopes that
he

he had effected; and that his excellency had ordered that he should be brought before him again.

Upon which our hero shewed him the state of his case drawn up in Latin, which he approved of, though there was some difficulty in making him understand the difference between his and our hero's way of writing, in regard to the odd characters the Spaniards make use of in all their manuscripts. This petition or remonstrance, he intreated him to shew to the governor, previous to his being brought before him, which he promised to do; and the day following, our hero, under the command of a serjeant and a file of musqueteers, was conveyed to the governor's house, accompanied by a great concourse of people; though he met with none of the treatment he received on his being sent to prison, notwithstanding the figure he then made was worse than his former one; for he assured me, that his face was converted into a perfect crust made of mud and clay, his beard run wild for want of combing; his eyes swelled on the outsides, and within sunk into their sockets, his cheeks sticking to his jaw-bones, and his teeth quite rusty for want of use; in short, he was a living skeleton, upon which an ingenious surgeon might have read a lecture of anatomy without the trouble of dissecting it.

In this condition he was placed for some time in the guard-room; and among some of the same company he had been with before; who seemed now unanimously to agree, that he had been cruelly treated; not without some reflections on the governor, and numberless

blessings to the priest; and though the judgment was so much in favour of the prisoner, yet it was not altogether in compassion or regard to him, but arose, in a great measure, from the imperious and unforgiving temper of the governor, who had drawn the hatred of the whole province on him; and gave them some hopes, that such a premature and extraordinary confinement of a person who discovered so much sanctity in his behaviour, might bring his honour cognizable to some court of ecclesiastical justice.

From the guard-room our hero was brought into the governor's hall, where his excellency read his case once or twice over, and then gave it to the priest, his benefactor, who sat next to him, ordering him to examine the prisoner in Latin, Viva voce, before the whole judicature; whose answers being a little embarrassed, the generous priest accounted for it, from the difference of their pronounciations, which he took the trouble of explaining, from the instructions our hero had given him before, upon writing his memorial. At length, he perceived by the countenances of his judges, that they were satisfied with the truth of his case, as it was set forth in his petition and remonstrance; the sum total of which was, that he had ignorantly taken on him the order and habit of a pilgrim, with an humble prayer to be discharged from his imprisonment: he was then ordered to withdraw, and accordingly, waited without, in hopes of a favourable determination; which, to his inexpressible joy, was soon made, and an order directed to the
gaoler

gaoler to discharge him from prison forthwith; but all the patriarchal utensils, formerly belonging to his supposed uncle, detained from him.

He got this salutary account but a very little time before his cloak made its appearance, though not quite in as good order as when he was divested of it; nor was it returned from any remorse of conscience, whatever it might be from the apprehension of the priest's being acquainted with the manner it was taken from him; which was a favour he had ready in store for the gaoler, had he not thought proper to restore it; and as to his bonnet, it was by a very singular act of clemency, converted into a woollen cap, by the colour of it, a cousin-german to his bonnet.

Our hero was ordered to wait at the gaoler's, till the priest by whose intercession he was released, came to him, which he did in a very short time, bidding him follow him to his house; where he gave him absolution on account of his confession in gaol, his spiritual benediction in regard to his soul, and his terrestrial one to his body, by cloathing it with a long black waistcoat with several dozen of small buttons on it, a shirt, a pair of stockings, and a large brimmed hat; he likewise gave him to the value of fifteen shillings in money, and as much good advice as was worth forty times that sum, if it had been carefully followed.

When the good old man had compleated all his acts of charity, he very affectionately inquired of our hero where he proposed travelling to; he told him to Barcelona, and there to take shipping for Ireland, rather than run

any more risques of getting into France; which on account of the plague, he must, in all probability, find very difficult to do; adding, that he would publish his exceeding humanity and charity in all parts of the world where he should ever afterwards come; in which he was perfectly sincere, though he then little imagined that he should have an opportunity of doing it in Ireland: nor could any one living have had a more grateful regard to the unspeakable kindness he shewed him, or have felt a more exquisite sense of it than he did, or to this hour does, whenever reflection presents him to his view, unwearied in labouring to raise up one immersed in want and misery, disinterested in every act he did, an advocate without a fee, and truly benevolent, on the principles of charity and goodness; and though the methods taken to gain credit with him were perhaps not altogether excusable, which is left to the candour of such as shall make a more refined judgment on it, yet they were no abatement to his merit, nor will his reward be the less.

End of the SECOND BOOK.

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM.
BOOK III.

OUR hero being thus providentially delivered from the most abject condition he could have fell into, and his good benefactor having procured him a passport for Barcelona, he prepared for his journey in great spirits, being satisfied that nothing so terrible could ever happen to him again; and resolved for the future, to dress like a perfect layman, and if fortune should continue him in the exercise of change and variety, not to shelter himself under a religious cloak again, depending particularly on the charitable dispositions of the priests, and consequently did not despair of getting back to England: but however sound he was in his mind, he was far from being so in his body; for his confinement in the dungeon had brought an illness on him that he had reason to believe would be attended with dangerous consequences; and upon that account, he intreated his old friend
the

the priest, to assist him in getting into an hospital for a little time, there being a very large one in the town, into which the priest prevailed on the director to admit him; and as the place and usage in it were very particular, I am apt to think that a description of them will not be unacceptable.

As soon as he got his paper of admission he attended at the hospital with it, into which as soon as he was received, he was ordered into a long room, in which there were about forty beds, in two rows, the walls of it were hung round with pictures of saints, crucifixes, and written accounts of several cures that had been performed there; most of them so deeply loaded with the wonderful ways by which they had been effected, that though he would very joyfully have then experienced one of them, yet he had not faith enough to believe their historical account, and so, like other unbelievers, got no benefit by tradition.

They had neither testers, vallins, or curtains to their beds, and no more than one sheet to any of them, and that not much larger than a kitchen towel; and what gave the most dismal aspect to the room was, when any person had received extreme unction, and was thought to be past recovery, though perfectly in his senses, he was sprinkled with ashes, and a tall crucifix set at the feet of his bed; at the bottom of which were laid two or three skulls, with a lamp burning at the front of the crucifix, and close to it were lain a wooden pick-ax and shovel.

Those ensigns of death made a most solemn figure, especially by the glimmering of the lamps,

lamps, which burned all night; though I have been told that there is not any people in the world that are less shocked at such solemn appearances than the Spaniards; which may be reasonably attributed to their confidence and firm belief in absolution.

But in regard to our hero's imaginations, whose faith was on that occasion by some degrees less than theirs, they had such an effect on him, that they entirely prevented the good effects expected from their physical preparations; and he every moment expected to be carried out in a bier, and though the gloominess of his lodgings was sometimes an incentive to his devotion, yet even what share of contrition he had, was often abated when he has seen the deceased, after the ceremonies of unction, death, and domestick burial, eat an hearty mess of broth; nay, shew further instances of life, by his walking off with a sheet, or some other furniture belonging to the hospital, which is no uncommon thing after such a resurrection there.

According to the practice of physick in that country, let the distemper be what it would, the remedies for it are bleeding and drinking snow-water; the first of these prescriptions was ordered for our hero, though his complaint was of an ague; for the cure of which, according to the opinion of the more learned physicians here, arsenick is full as proper. It was there that he first tasted laudanum, and continued to make use of afterwards, on any indisposition of mind and body.

When his Esculapius paid him the first visit, he was so bewildered in a black, bushy wig, his whiskers

whiskers so tarnished with snuff, and of so meagre and disconsolate a countenance, that he apprehended he was a lunatick, and had broke out of his cell in some other part of the hospital; and when he desired to feel his pulse, our hero pretended he was asleep; a much safer position than any he thought such a sort of a doctor could put him in; but being told by one that lay near him, that the physician was there, and opening his eyes gradually for another view of him, the doctor plucked his hand to him with as much force as might have dislocated his shoulder-bone; and feeling his pulse, at once ordered him the never-failing nostrums of phlebotomy and snow-water: and as our hero was a foreigner, the doctor seemed more inquisitive about his religion than his distemper; very sententially concluding, that if he was an Irishman, he must undoubtedly be a good catholick; and, under that religious sentiment, took his leave of him.

The next who made his appearance was the surgeon, who put him in dread of an amputation of his limbs, being just come from executing that part of his office at a neighbouring bed, and part of the blood from the operation still on his cloaths; but being probably satisfied with what execution he had done, he only clapped his lancet between his teeth, turned down the bed-cloaths, and being told that the doctor had just visited his patient, he nodded his head, and to our hero's unspeakable consolation, walked very peaceably off, in expectation, it is supposed, of seeing the doctor's recipe.

As

As to their nurses, they are a sort of amphibious creatures, between nuns and lay-women, generally dressed in short gowns made of white blanketting, and a long trailing petticoat of the same, with a cross on a knotted worsted cord, hanging from their waists to the ground, and have such dismal countenances, occasioned by the unwholesomeness of the place, and the continual burning of the lamps, that they look like emissaries from the grave, to such as were destined soon to pay it a visit; and are so deliciously perfumed with the scent of broth made of garlick, pompions, rice, and green pepper, that the smell of them might possibly be of more use in hysterical disorders than *assa foetida*.

And these female attendants are as well skilled in curtailing the hospital allowance on shore, as swabbers on board an hospital-ship at sea; following their example, by sending such as the doctor and surgeon forget, out of the world by fasting.

Their provisions for the sick are equally as bad as their physical applications, always boiled to rags, in such a compound of broth and sauce, as would much sooner empty than fill a stomach; and perhaps for want of emeticks, sometimes applied to that use.

There are people of distinction who often visit these hospitals with a very compassionate view, and behave with great tenderness to the sick, giving them raisins, oranges, chesnuts, and often sweetmeats: and some old women are so fond of these attendances that they pay their hospital visits two or three times a day; now and then bringing perfumed ointments with them, some
of

of which I have heard our hero say, have been applied to him; though he had much rather have been in the quiet possession of a piece of roasted beef than all the spikenard of that kingdom.

Here our hero was so unfortunate as to be without the assistance of his good friend the Italian priest, who went from Olite, the morning after his admission into the hospital; though a great many other priests and friars came on purpose, as he was a stranger, to converse with him about his travels, and the occasion of his having been confined in prison, with which most of them were in some sort acquainted, though not with all the reasons, he having been at leisure to frame a great many additional, and indeed surprizing accounts of it there; which he was no loser by, according as they operated on his hearers.

The only benefit he could get from this dismal society, of which he was a member about three weeks, was an account from some of the soldiers which was the most private, though the longest way to Barcelona, in order that he might avoid meeting with any of the regiments he formerly belonged to; and according to their directions took his rout through the mountains of Samnozera, which lie between Old and New Castile, and are very high, and at that time, which was in lent, full of snow.

At the time he left the hospital he had about five crowns in money, part of them from the charitable contribution he got while he lay sick in it, and was dressed in a coarse, brown frize coat, with the black waistcoat and large brimmed

med hat which his father-confessor had given him, and had rescinded his whiskers, on account of a breaking-out on his lips after he had got rid of the ague.

This dress, as he was going to a sea-port, and designed to put on the sailor, was by no means a proper one; and accordingly he changed his large canonical hat, for a small one of another sort, and bought a speckled handkerchief, a yellow canvass waistcoat, and a pair of linen trousers, which are the common dress of a Spanish sailor; he likewise furnished himself with an ebony image of St. Antonio, who he knew was their tutelar saint, and a piece of furniture absolutely necessary to complete his equipment in that character.

In this manner he began his journey towards Barcelona; and as soon as he got out of Olite, he sat down very pensively, reflecting on what an extraordinary escape he had had in regard to his trial, and one equally as dangerous to life and limbs, an hospital-course of phlebotomy and snow; and began to be a little scrupulous about St. Antonio, not being quite clear as to his being related to St. James, his former saint; and if so, whether he should not be introduced into some new troubles upon his account; but as he had determined to keep clear of all religious habits, he endeavoured to satisfy his mind by making use of a saint, independent of its bearer's dress; concluding that he might as well begin a voyage without a compass, as a journey in that country without a saint; and therefore resolved to stick to St. Antonio, as the properest patron for one of his profession; and without farther scruples

scruples travelled on till he came to Bartraga, where, as usual, he got acquainted with the priest of the parish, and by his assistance got a tolerable good lodging, on the footing of a foreigner and a scholar, with now and then a relation of his losses at sea : but was under some more than ordinary concern, in regard to the length of his journey, and what a mountainous part of the world he was to traverse ; till by a warm recourse to the most excellent remedy against dejection, he drove away his occasional depression and want of spirits, and began to revive again, partly by the acquaintance and whimsical conversation he had with a young fellow who attended on a pretended doctor of physick, and the merry discovery he made of his great qualifications.

The doctor pretended to discover all manner of distempers by tasting his patient's urine ; and being very weak-sighted, counterfeited absolute blindness ; and from his servant, whose name was Pedro Veragues, he collected the mysterious part of the doctor's life.

Pedro was a fellow indued with all the subtilty and art with which nature could furnish one of his mind and disposition, and had, by an unjustifiable use of the doctor's wanting a clear sight, and the necessities of his circumstances on other occasions, extracted all the secrets of his life from him ; and as he had faculties not much more retentive than his master's, he furnished our hero with an account of the doctor's whole affairs, before he had given himself the trouble of asking him a question about him : in short, he was an underling villain of the worst complexion ;

plexion; and though our hero suspected from common report that his master was an impostor, he had no other view in inquiring about him, than to satisfy a travelling curiosity, in relation to one, whose pretended miraculous cures had made such a noise in that part of the world: for Pedro had discovered to him that the doctor was a Biscayan, and had been driven out of Bilboa for a cheat; that he was not quite blind, though he pretended to be so, and undertook to cure all manner of distempers by his being an adept in urine; and sometimes professed the science of fortune-telling, but that was only on particular occasions, and at places where he was so unlucky as not to have patients of the other sort: however, at all times he pretended to an infallible knowledge in the exact time of any person's death: by all which, Pedro assured our hero that the doctor had got a great deal of money; but was so penurious, that unless it was by his playing now and then a trick on him, he could never have made the appearance he then did; which was in a mongrel dress between a Frenchman and a Spaniard, with a ragged ruffled shirt, a long cloak, his stockings coaxed, and a pair of yellow pumps without heels, and, to add to the beauty of his dress, he was as ill-looking a fellow as was to be met with, and carried full demonstrations of his dexterity as well in his countenance as in his way of talking.

Pedro informed our hero that the doctor's name was Don Manuel Mendoza, and discovered to him the particular offence for which he had been driven out of Bilboa; and of several

ral other most extraordinary performances, to which Pedro had not only been privy, but had acted a considerable part in it.

The doctor's blindness had taught Pedro to make a quicker use of his own sight than usual, and not only to find out a way to purloin every thing he could lay his hands on, but to keep them from the sight of the owner ever afterwards; which ingenious practice soon relieved our hero from his company; for in a few days after their acquaintance, Pedro was detected in robbing a child of a coral and silver bells, and for that crime sent to gaol about ten leagues from his master; and after justice had overtaken this most extraordinary aid de camp, our hero, out of curiosity, paid his master a visit, on pretence of advising with him about his own health, having, as he informed the doctor, been very ill lately, and notwithstanding all the remedies made use of in an hospital for his recovery, he still continued in a bad state of health; but doubted not but that he should be perfectly restored to it again, could he but come under the hands of so skilful and successful a physician, as he universally was acknowledged to be.

And after the doctor had made some few inquiries about the nature of his complaints, he desired to taste his patient's water, after it had stood some time to settle; which, he said, was in a very great ferment, occasioned by his having drank a considerable deal of white wine that very morning; and if the doctor's eyes had not been worse than his palate, he would have ordered him to have been blistered, from the colour of his face; but sipping pretty plentifully

tifully before he would venture to give his opinion, he contracted himself into the figure of a summonitor to the grave, and shaking his head, told him that he was in imminent danger from a frigidity in his blood, which prevented a due circulation of the fluids.

Our hero submitted with all resignation to his judgment, and told him that he believed his observations were too true; and as he desired to make his peace with the world, he was very desirous to be informed from his supernatural knowledge, how long he had to live in it; at the same time giving him a real of plate as a fee, which indeed all informations are grounded on; upon which he took a bag out of his table-drawer, and from thence pulled out a bell, without a clapper, and struck it thrice with an ebony stick over a basin of water, and taking our hero by his hand, told him with great composure, "That by the sound of that bell, he knew the duration and end of his patient's lives; and feignior," says he, (and indeed I have heard our hero say, he could never get the sound of the bell entirely out of his ears) "I am sorry to tell you, yours will be a very short one." Our hero was sensible that he knew nothing at all of the matter, but being unprepared to verify a prediction of that sort, and the doctor affirming it with so much vehemence, made him quite out of temper; and as he thought a judgment of that nature was not worth paying for, he demanded his money back again.

The doctor who was quite unacquainted with the nature and use of refunding, bad him, in a great

great passion, be gone, and prepare for another world; which journey, and the loss of his money in so ridiculous a manner, especially as he had so little time to spend in it, our hero did not by any means approve of; but in return of the doctor's denunciation, called him a cheat and an impostor, and told him, that he was endued with a greater share of the spirit of prophecy than himself; and that he knew his name, and the place of his birth, and many of the tricks he had played, and particularly how, after what manner, and for what he was driven out of Bilboa; in short, he repeated great part of the intelligence Pedro had given him.

This made the doctor open his eyes, though they had very little sight in them, and reduced him very submissively to confess, that our hero had, as well as himself, a supernatural understanding; otherwise it would have been impossible for him to have related so many transactions of his life; intreating him, for the love of God, not to discover what he had heard, or knew of him; particularly as the young man, who had formerly attended him had left him; and then gave our hero his money back again, which was all he aimed at; nor had he at first any inclination to propagate his disgrace, much less when he had so feelingly exposed some of those necessities, which he afterwards discovered more at large, of his own accord; by telling him he was a native of Galicia, and had been educated at Salamanca; but having been suspected of a criminal correspondence with a young gentlewoman of family in that neighbourhood,

bourhood, he fled from thence, for the preservation of his life into Biscaia; and there, for a maintenance, commenced physician; in which science he had arrived to some knowledge, but falling ill of a fever, he had for some time lost his sight entirely, and at that time had recovered but very little of it: that the fellow who had attended him had been a servant to a mountebank, and had played a great many bad pranks, and at last had committed the robbery mentioned before; and had likewise taken from him every thing of value, except some little money, which he had for his immediate support; and that he must inevitably perish, unless some good christian or other would assist him as a guide hereafter; but that if he could get any person of that sort whom he might confide in, he did not doubt but that he should be able to procure a comfortable support for both, by his knowledge and success; and still continued, it may be justly said, so blind, as to exaggerate and insist on his physical qualifications and predestinative gifts to a great degree: but as our hero liked his notion about a colleague, he did not think it adviseable to controvert his abilities, but rather to condole with him on his losses; considering, that if he could prevail on him to take Barcelona in his circuit, he should not only have a companion, but would find it a much safer and better way of travelling than that of a sailor, exclusive of the gains to be made by his attendance on one of so reputable a function; and accordingly used his best endeavours to persuade him to set out for that place, for the benefit of mankind in general,

L

and

and his own in particular; and agreed to attend him on his galenical expedition, and accordingly commenced his pupil in physick; and as soon as he had learned from the doctor the mysterious characters of scruples, drachms, grains, and other hieroglyphicks made use of in physical recipes, he became an adept; and in his own opinion, one not much inferior to the doctor in an urinal way; and during such time as he continued his mate, got little less by it than he did, by the great care he took, not to lose any part of what belonged to himself, out of a division of the profits; terms that required no small persuasions to bring the doctor to.

Our hero cured a great many sore eyes by his old prescriptions, though he neither could, nor indeed was inclined to relieve his master in that respect, whose blindness he always recommended to his patients as a certain sign of an uncommon capacity in finding out the nature of human disorders by urine, the senses of feeling and tasting being always most keen where the sight was wanting: and indeed our hero's assiduity was so great, and his observations so well applied, that he would have been able to prescribe for all the distempers incident to mankind, if his instructor's judgment had been equal to his pretensions.

As to the figure the doctor made, which it is particularly necessary for all proficients in that science, should be a good one, his was none of the worst; for the dress he generally appeared in was a full suit of black cloaths, a very genteel pair of whiskers, and a small pasteboard about his neck, covered with a piece of fine
white

white cloth, square, with a notch in the middle, like a barber's bason; and what made him look more physical than ordinary was, a great fur-cap lined with red silk, from which hung a large piece of that of a greenish colour over his eyes: eyes, that alas! had no use for those unspeakable ornaments to knowledge, spectacles; a disappointment, it is said, in that country, almost as irksome as the real want of sight.

The doctor's way of travelling was on an ass, which our hero bestrode as often as he could prevail on him to walk, which he would sometimes condescend to do, under the guidance of the man who drove the beast: he had a pair of bags made of part of a camel's skin, not unlike a soldier's knapsack, but something larger; in one of these was all his bodily furniture, and in the other, a parcel of bladders full of ready-made medicines; the greatest part of which were papers of pukes, purging bolus's, some made of jallop, and others of fairy-flax; and for the use of children, such as were made of manna, some laudanum, jesuits bark, and aqua ardente, in which was infused red pepper, oil of garlick, and flower of brimstone: he had likewise great variety of salves and plaisters ready made, and abundance of nostrums, the names of which were of so heathenish an invention, that our hero could not recollect them, though he made up all the medicines by the doctor's instructive feeling; who, he observed, prescribed bleeding in almost every case; which on account of a great tremor in our hero's hand, especially in a morning, was an art he could never arrive to; though it is said, that by his attempting it, he made business for some others

of the fraternity, who must be considerable gainers by his ill success in phlebotomy.

Wherever the doctor lodged, there was a pasteboard hung out at the door, on which was wrote Don Manuel Mendoza, graduate in physick, and urinal doctor; and upon reading the inscription there was generally a great concourse of visitants the first day; some few of them indisposed, but the greatest part of them favoured the doctor with their company in order to make a jest of him and his pupil: but as he was well prepared for attacks of this sort, the more contempt was shewn to the doctor's practice, the more strongly he affirmed the cures which were the consequences of it, and had a long list of the names and places of abode of persons who had been restored to their health by his means, whom neither the doctor, he, nor any other person had ever so much as seen or heard of; most of whose names were enrolled by his former coadjutor; and the rest of his nomination after, it is natural to suppose, his being executed for the robbery committed on the child.

Most of these patients were females, and many of their complaints a tympany, or some other dropical protuberances, which, notwithstanding the doctor's gustus urinalis, often ended in a distemper which wanted the assistance of a midwife more than his.

Many of them were really ill of agues and intermitting fevers, and were relieved, and sometimes cured by the jesuits bark, which they were well supplied with; and got more money, at least more credit by that single remedy, than
by

by all the rest of their *materia medica*: he directed our hero to make up those pills artificially enough, in honey and the raspings of cedar; and sold them by the name of *Pilula del cortex d' la vida*.

They seldom stayed long in a town, for fear their remedies should prove ineffectual, or rather mortal; but alas! the poor doctor was so unfortunate as to stay long enough at Villa Franca, to poison a barber-surgeon, who had been a demi-professor of physick himself, and most superstitiously addicted to believe in the efficacy of all sorts of quackeries; the occasion of which was as follows.

The doctor used to mix arsenick in an ointment he generally had ready prepared for blotches or breakings-out, and sometimes sold it to destroy vermin; but by a mistake of not feeling one of the papers properly, which was the only way he had to distinguish them; they being all tied in different manners, with fewer or more knots, according to their respective qualities or uses: the doctor ordered the younger Galen arsenick, instead of *mercurius dulcis*, which, as soon as he had swallowed, discovered symptoms of poison; upon which the whole town was up in arms; and as soon as the word was gone about that the barber was past hopes of recovery, the doctor's lodgings were surrounded, to prevent his escape, in the most retired part of which, our hero lay barricaded, under apprehensions not altogether unallied to those at O-lite: but by good fortune, and the assistance of the night, he got away unperceived by the croud; who would otherwise have most amply

rewarded him for his part and portion in the doctor's physical administration.

Our hero ran from the town with all the expedition he could, lurking near it, till he had an opportunity of hearing of the operation of the barber's dose, which, thanks to the strength of his constitution, proved more favourable than was expected, and the patient reported out of danger. Upon which he returned back to Villa Franca, where he found his old master just discharged from prison, and ordered to be conveyed out of town, with much more company in his retinue than when he entered it; and it is believed that his man would have had the honour of attending him on the same ambassage, with the addition of whipping, if he had not most dexterously collected together his small proportion of baggage, and marched off incognito, fully determined never to practise physick again, but more particularly by casting of urine.

Being thus disappointed both in his pilgrim's progress, and galenical expedition, he began to have some doubts about the success of his sailor's jacket; but as he had not time enough to pack up the dress he had been furnished with by the doctor, which was a scarlet coat, and a tarnished laced waistcoat, he depended only on that of a sailor, and consequently could pretend to no other occupation; and so giving his cudgel a twirl or two, he left Villa Franca, and kept jogging on till he overtook a company of muleteers, whose beasts were loaded with wine, tobacco, and leather; and finding that they intended to travel part of his road, he commenced an acquaintance with them, and
 shewed

shewed the chief of them, whom he apprehended to be so by the dress he was in, and his companions carriage to him, his passport; at the same time telling him, that he had been shipwrecked, and that the owner of the vessel lived at Barcelona, whither he was going, and that all the hands on board, except himself, were drowned; assuring him that his miraculous escape was by the assistance of St. Antonio, whose image he produced, affirming, that he got safe on shore on a single plank; decyphering shipwreck in all its horrors, expecting that the more feelingly he did so, the more it would excite them to compassion. But this was another mistake in politicks, for the unpolished brute of a muleteer, without any regard either to his saint, or history, shrugged up his shoulders, took a large pinch of snuff, and hastening his mules, swore that by listening to a pack of his damned lies, he had lost half a league on his journey; so that what he thought to be the best concerted story for his present advantage, had no other effect on him or his comrades, than his obtaining liberty to travel in their company, and to lie at the same inns with them, of which he afterwards most heartily, truly, and sincerely repented; for undoubtedly, by our hero's character of them, such another company of rogues hardly ever met together, ever gaming, quarrelling and swearing, excepting at such times as they were repeating a pater-noster, and a few ava maria's, or playing on their jews-trumps; such a piece of guttural musick, and so badly handled, that the antient performance on a

sow-gelders horn, was by many degrees more entertaining.

These most excellent guests, carried their own, and their mules provisions with them, which they eat promiscuously on the road, their diet being generally dried fish, a salt sardena, or bread and garlick; and that of their beasts chopped straw and barley; but so far were they from hospitality, that in contempt of both a saint and his bearer, they offered neither of them a taste: but tho' our hero was neglected at meal-time, they did not forget to make him one of their company at night, by a civil invitation to a game of cards, which from the instruction he got from his brother-foldiers, he understood tolerably well, and fortune favouring him, in spite of all their art and knavery at the game, he won about three reals of plate; but a point of law arising about the payment, the whole brigade gave their verdict against him, and besides not giving him damages, they made him pay the costs out of the money he had deposited for his stake.

This was a sort of treatment that our hero could not well digest, but as they were going towards Barcelona, and he quite a stranger to the road, he continued travelling with them a day or two longer, and slept with them in the stables where their mules were kept at night, with some straw under, and a blanket over them, and the newest fashioned pillows of pack-saddles; however, the usage he got at gaming made him keep his distance, chusing a corner of the stable by himself at night, till at length they

they came in search of him, but finding what was more of service, his breeches, they picked his pockets of all that was contained in them, and took away his bags, in which he had two shirts, and a black waistcoat, which when he inquired after in the most modest manner he could, they put an end to his ceremony, by beating him in a most inhuman manner, one of them running his goad under his eye, which all the pilgrim's spittle, and the other ingredients he formerly made use of, could not cure in a month's time; and to give him a proper discharge, they swore, that if he followed them half a league further, they would toss him in a blanket, and that St. Antonio should get share of the frisk; so that he was glad to make the best of his way from them, with a bequest of his money and curses.

Being now stripped of every penny of his money, he was obliged to stick the closer to St. Antonio, who though he deserted him at that time, on account doubtless of the company he kept, he afterwards made a very proper use of him, and his sailor's habit; which though they had no influence over those barbarians, yet were of singular service to him at all convents and monasteries, and with great numbers of the clergy, where his escape from being drowned by the power and influence of that saint, prevailed on their credulity beyond all expectation, and soon repayed his loss at gaming, and got him an ecclesiastical presentment for the felony and robbery committed on his breeches; tho' upon mature deliberation he could not lay much to the charge of fortune in that instance, other than

that he had given no occasion for such treatment; but this use he made of it, not to chuse too much company on the road, nor create any intimacy at all with those he did, tho' he might have travelled to Jerusalem, before he could have fell among such another gang of thieves.

From the time he parted with this inhuman society, he travelled for the most part alone; it being the time of lent, when even such as were not disposed to abstinence, might exercise that talent from an undeniable reason, that nothing was to be had; the surest way of complying with self-denial, and at this season, such as possibly had not been strict enough in observing their fasts, made choice of the mountains, for a more rigorous punishment; I mean such as called themselves disciplinarians, who punish themselves at that season, in such a manner, as, tho' our hero had the curiosity of observing them, he always excused himself from partaking of their devotion, which in reality was of too feeling a nature for his tender constitution.

They who undergo this ceremony, which on a conscientious provocation, has undoubtedly more merit in it than an empty stomach; are cloathed in long black canvas gowns, which reach down to their shoes: they wear on their heads a cap of the same colour, near two feet high, made in the form of a sugar-loaf, from which falls a piece of cloth, with holes on each side of it, on purpose for them to look thro': their shoulders and waists are quite naked, which they whip with small cords, till the blood streams from them; and such as are of a more delicate constitution, make use of small needles,
stuck

stuck in sponges, which occasions their blood to run very conspicuously; an artifice, which tho' it is attended with little or no pain, is very attractive, and procures great veneration for the sufferers.

At this season, there are sermons to be heard in every street, in delivering which, their preachers, who are generally friars, use such extraordinary agitation, that a stranger would naturally imagine, that they were under a disciplinarian exercise, at least that they were rather inspired by passion than devotion; and let their subject be what it will, they take care to prevent their hearers from sleeping, at the time they are handling it: a piece of policy sometimes wanting in other congregations, some degrees northward of them.

Our hero, in proceeding on his journey, met with a most remarkable instance of the voluntary severity of life, undergone by an hermit; the place of whose abode was at the top of a mountain, in which there was a large hollow rock, with several apartments in it as distinctly made, as if it had been the work of art; in the cavity of this rock, being previously acquainted of his being there, he met with a very old man, lying as if he was in a horse-trough; he was quite grey with age, and yet discovered a countenance blessed with an uncommon chearfulness: he had on him a shirt made of camel's hair, and nothing over or under him, but a common-hair-cloth, and in so emaciated a condition, that he was the perfect epitome of hunger. Our hero could see no other furniture or utensils about him, than two or three wooden dishes, an

hour-glass, a skull or two, some images, a crucifix, and a lamp burning; he went close up to him, tho' the old man at first took little or no notice of him, but our hero being willing to collect all he could from him, asked him how long he had been there, and what had induced him to lead such a wretched life; and though he did not expect much satisfaction from his answers, believing by the appearance he made, that his reason was impaired, yet he surprized him with such a detail of his life, that our hero has often declared to me, that no part of it ever left his memory.

He affirmed to our hero, that he had lived in that rock about fifty years, and had all that time secluded himself from the company and conversation of mankind, as much as was in his power; that all his food was herbs, strawberries, chesnuts, and pomegranates, except some meal, which was sent now and then to him, from charitable hands unknown; and that he never drank any sort of wine, but sometimes squeezed the juice of wild grapes in a small cavity in the rock, and from thence took it out with a wooden ladle, which he made use of, instead of a cup: he allowed there were some offices in life not altogether unnecessary for persons engaged in them; but yet when compared to the quiet of such a retirement as his, they were but solemn impertinencies; and that in his peaceful retreat, nothing could be done or heard, which might occasion an uneasy reflection; where could be no whispers of malice, no censures, no disturbances from rumour, nor sollicitudes from hope or fear; his conversation being only with his
ever

ever improving companion, his book; and the more he talked on this subject, the more he seemed to be in an extacy; but when he began to describe the motives for the life he had led, he perfectly surprized him: he said, with a look of complacency beyond expression, that he came thither to shun the pageantry and pomp of life, to enjoy the sweets of contemplation, and peace of mind; that his little cell was the seat of inspiration; that he was perfectly free from all the wiles of deceitful life, and haunts of men; that his very grief was a flow of extacy; and that his cross, his cowl, and his weeds, were his coat of arms; and had more emblazonry in them, than all the pomp of the universe; that his beads were his wealth, and his hour-glass and yonder skulls his memento's, and monitors; that he never looked on his crucifix, but it filled his soul with adoration; that his lamp put him in mind of the star of Bethlehem; and the place he lay in, the manger of his saviour; and taking him by the hand, "Young man, (says he) let me advise thee to shake off your empty and vain pursuits, and seek this true and genuine life; this pleasing and inexpressible repose, and then desired he would leave him, telling him, that he would pray for him." A discourse that left a greater impression on our hero's mind, than all the rhetorical declamations he had ever heard; who upon his return from the mountain, found from a fresh impression of feet, that some one had been with him that morning, and left him a mess of meal, and some chesnuts and oil; the last of which was mixed together in an earthen vessel. He heard it likewise confidently affirmed

affirmed by some of the inhabitants of the valley, that the old man had all along been fed by angels; and many other fabulous accounts a little too tedious, and too much on the marvellous to be recited here: but notwithstanding the influence of his conversation, our hero did not desire to be his messmate from the specimen of that part of his provisions which appeared to him, let his angelical ones be what they would; tho' that sort of life with the many fictions annexed to it, commands more reverence and regard for its followers, than is paid to any other sort of devotees whatsoever.

Not long after this intercourse and conversation with the hermit, our hero met with two young women, perhaps the greatest objects of compassion ever heard of: their heads and faces were quite covered with pieces of an old blanket, with their bodies almost naked, who, the nearer he came to them, the more they endeavoured to avoid him; and upon his obliging them to stop, fell on their knees, and begged for God's sake, that he would not interrupt them; which increasing his curiosity, he turned up the pieces of blanket which covered their faces, (which were by no means bad ones) and by the largeness of their eyes, and the obliqueness of look, common both to jews and gipsies, he discovered that they were not natives of Spain.

At first sight he concluded they were gipsies, but looking in one of their faces more nicely, he perceived she had been burned in the cheek, with the mark of a cross reversed, and could see several stripes on the neck of the other, and indeed the countenances and condition of two women

men so young as they seemed to be, expressed grief beyond all explanation; and immediately it occurred to him, that they had been punished for being jews: and seeing them under the most distracted apprehensions, he told them they had no manner of reason to be afraid of him; for that he was a foreigner, and sorry to see them in so dreadful a condition: upon which they told him they were sisters, and their father was a Neapolitan, and formerly lived at Lisbon in the occupation of a broker, and coming to Saragossa to follow that employment, had been taken up for professing the jewish religion, and put into the inquisition, where they were informed he died; and that they likewise had been secured on suspicion of their being of that religion, but on what testimony they could not tell; and after lying in gaol a long time, were stripped to their waists and whipped, and the eldest of them burned on the left cheek; and that they were afterwards set on asses, with their faces to their tails, and naked to their middles, exposed in every street of Saragossa, and then turned out of the gates of it in the very condition he met them; on an accusation of their being, what undoubtedly they were, jews, a sect they did not seem to deny they were of, upon our hero's examining them to that purpose.

They could not tell any particular place they were going to, but as they were informed they were in the road to France, they were in hopes, by some means or other, to get into it, and from thence to Naples, on board some vessel bound for that place; and indeed they wept so bitterly, and expressed their calamity so feelingly,

ly, that our hero, though he was hardly able to contribute a mite to relieve his fellow-christian, bestowed the most part of what money he had, to two unfortunate jews; and so left them, without the needless advice of not making another tour to Spain; which if they once got out of, it is to be believed, they would not be more fond of than himself; who, for many reasons, would have preferred any religion in that part of the world, to that of a jew; an heresy of a much worse complexion than what he was suspected of in the gaol of St. Jago.

To his great comfort he had travelled all this time without meeting any Spanish or other regiments, to interrupt him in his journey, except some few officers, who took no manner of notice of him, and once a party of soldiers, who had a prisoner in their custody, but whether for desertion or not, he could not tell; however, the remembrance of his being a deserter formerly, put him into such a pannick, that he marched at the rate of a league an hour, the remaining part of that day; and sometimes imagined, that he had such a pair of thumb-screws on, as the serjeant formerly favoured him with in his march from Almeida: at last, after a tedious and round-about road, he came within sight of Mountjuick, a little garrison about half a league from Barcelona; and there by his own confession, paid his devotions with as much fervency as ever penitent did at mount Calvary.

In the plain leading to Barcelona he overtook one of his former legendary brethren, a pilgrim; and being so well acquainted with his occupation, accosted him very judiciously, inquiring whether

whether he had the implements and qualifications he knew were necessary for his office? he told him, that he had not all of them, but that by his constant prayers to St. Jerome, he had been of great use and service to the sick: our hero knew well enough how necessary it was for him to make some such kind of declaration to all he met, but not being in the least indisposed, he had rather have had a draught out of his calabash, than all the prayers and remedies of his profession; and accordingly applied to him for one, which the sight of Barcelona, probably induced him to give more chearfully than he would otherwise have done; and so plentifully did our hero take of the contents of his vessel, that not a drop was left in it to sling away, which had sometimes been the custom, on entering into fresh quarters; though his brother-pilgrim seemed greatly surpris'd at the last go-down.

Our hero being now got to the gate of a nunnery in the suburbs of Barcelona, he there sat down; and, as if all his misfortunes were at an end, he began to consider the many vicissitudes and dangers he had gone through, from the time of his going to school, to his coming thither; and the more he contemplated, the more sensible he was of the providential hand that brought him through them; firmly determined to make, at some time or other, a proper use of them; and though, as it has been mentioned before, that he was frequently reduced to artifices and shifts far from justifiable, he hopes the candid reader will respite his judgment till he has for a moment considered himself in
his

his circumstances; and then candidly report what steps he would not take to deliver himself from them.

While he was sitting and ruminating after this manner, fully satisfied that nothing could arise to obstruct his designs, he observed a great resort of men and women, who made a tolerable appearance, going into the porch of the nunnery, where there was a large wheel fixed, differing only from the multiplying wheel of a jack, in regard to the many divisions that were in it, and all of them numbered. He had often been at the chapels of nunneries, and at their grates, but till then had never the curiosity of observing them so nicely; but seeing pieces of written paper put by some of the women into the divisions, for which they waited till the wheel came round again to the number wherein the papers were put, he watched very closely to see the consequence, which was something wrapped up in a piece of cloth; but the person who waited for it, took it away unopened. After he had stayed there for some time, he observed a lay-brother, belonging to some friary, give a blow to the wheel with his stick, and put a letter into one of those divisions, to which there came an answer in a very little time, but the person who received it carried it away with as much privacy as he thought it came to him; however, our hero observing him to go into the nunnery-walk, instead of returning to Barcelona, followed him to a seat at a distance, where he unpinned a linnen cloth, and took something out of it, which he supposed to be money, and some bread and fish.

Upon

Upon which he asked him the meaning of those wheels ; he told our hero, that on some festival, or other particular days, they were made use of to convey charity in the most private manner, so as neither the giver or receiver might be known ; which was no uncomfortable account to him, who was as hungry as any one that had attended the wheel at any festival-day that year ; though his informant, who had no desire to be acquainted with his distress, devoured his benefaction, without offering him a taste ; and so left him to his meditations on the wheel, to which he returned that instant ; and in a very little time after he had given it a blow or two with his stick, there appeared in one of the divisions a paper pinned up, in which there was a large piece of cake, and some dried figs, which in all probability were intended for a reduced gentleman, who made a very forlorn figure, by the badness of his cloak, shoes, and stockings, and his sword without a chape on the scabbard ; and, at that time, was in deep conversation with two priests, at a very small distance from the wheel ; but our hero not being at leisure to consider whose property they were, and very unwilling to make his publick entry into Barcelona with an empty stomach, applied them to the use of one, to whom he knew that sort of charity would be most privately bestowed, and one that stood in the utmost need of it ; a charity infinitely advanced in its value, by the fair hands it came from.

It is very difficult to get a sight of these nuns, for, except on festival days, they are invisible even at their chapels, where they have a casement

ment made of tin, with little holes punched in it, much after the manner of a tin-lanthorn, through which they can see and not be seen: but on grand festivals, such as Christmas and Easter, they are taken down and glass windows placed in their stead; from whence you may then have a lovely prospect of beauty, retired from the very uses it was created for; and innocence, best intitled to the most extensive freedom, a voluntary prisoner, from what inspiration I must leave my reader to guess.

On these festivals they perform their part of musick most delightfully well, from an harmony in their voices which excels any of their instruments, which for the most part are distinguishably bad; they are at all other times quite muffled up in their coifs, hoods, and veils, and yet, if possible, would even make dejection amiable; a piece of practice, I have often heard our hero say, that in all his part of the study of divinity, he could not find any where commanded, or, was he in his holiness's seat, would he suffer to be practised.

He gave me an account of the burial of one of these nuns, which was attended with so much solemnity, that I believe it will not be disagreeable to relate it.

The corpse was brought into their chapel, on a silver bier, to an altar covered with black cloth, behind which were a great number of glimmering lamps; the bearers laid it down opposite to the image of the Virgin Mary, dressed in black, near it was the picture of two angels in white, each with a large wax-candle burning in

in its hand, fronting the image of St. Anne, which expressed grief to the life.

The whole sisterhood with their mother abbess in the front, stood in a row on one side of the chapel, and an equal number of capuchin friars opposite to them; each of the nuns had a black veil on, which reached down to their knees, and every one of them carried a lighted wax-candle; there were likewise several friars of the Dominican order, whose office it was to sprinkle the corpse with holy water, and carry about burning frankincense; after high mass was sung, in concert with a band of musick, the corpse was taken out of the bier, habited in the same dress the nun wore when she was alive; and her face exposed to publick view, with her thumbs tied with a black ribband, and a cross fixed between them; and as soon as they had sung an anthem, they laid the body in the grave with its face downwards, upon which the spectators flung some small wooden crucifixes, a great many sprigs of olive dipped in holy water, and then threw in a spadeful of earth; upon which all the musick sounded, and as soon as the corpse was quite covered, they made use of their trumpets only, and continued in the exercise of that sort of musick, with great solemnity, for a considerable time. The ceremony being thus ended, the nuns and friars went out of the chapel in pairs, distributing little loaves of bread, remarkably indented with a cross, which were brought in their habits and sleeves of their gowns on purpose for the poor; a much more solemn way of burying the dead, than a bacchanalian battle,

battle, begun, continued, and ended in whisky, snuff and tobacco.

As soon as our hero got within the gates of Barcelona, he was challenged by the centinel, and by him brought to the officer of the guard, who asked him a great many questions, which he did not think proper to answer, otherwise than in very imperfect Spanish, that he was an Englishman, and a sailor who had been shipwrecked, and shewed him his passport, which contained nothing more in it than the description of his person, and his liberty of travelling to Barcelona; which as soon as the officer had read, he bad him go about his business, telling him there was an Englishman who kept an house of entertainment on the Mole, who could understand him much better than he did.

The serjeant afterwards, in his turn, was very inquisitive how long he had been in Spain, and where, and after what manner, he was cast away; an account of which he lengthened out to all the advantages he could, with a view of extracting a piece of bread, and a little wine from him, being in a very proper frame of body and mind to receive both. The serjeant was an old bite, and understood traffick as well as his correspondent; for after our hero had given him a detail of his escape worth at least a belly-full, he took very little notice of it, other than some fresh-water reflections on mariners in general; telling him, "That a sailor's life was one of the worst in the world, that they were all a pack of spaniels, of the same species as an otter or a water-rat, a mere composition of pitch and

and tar, slaves to wind and weather, a parcel of rope-dancers under the command of all the Lapland witches in Greenland, ever smoaking and swearing; and whenever they had a penny, there was not a strumpet in a sea-port but got share of it: But on the contrary, in the army, if a man, as the saying is, would but keep himself a little tight and clean, he could not miss of doing well; why prithee, sailor, look at me now, look at my coat and breeches, and compare your jacket and trouzers with them, and tell us which makes the best figure; observe that young fellow yonder, with a shoulder-knot."

This same gentleman with a shoulder-knot was a Swiss, and a corporal of a regiment of that nation then on duty, who was directed to take the honest fellow, our hero, to a wine-house; which he did, without any manner of reluctance from his companion, and called for bread and wine; and though the serjeant had been a little prolix in his discourse, the corporal thought proper to add a little more to it; and doubtless for the same purpose; that is to say, "That the sailor might convert himself into a soldier;" adding to what the serjeant had said before, "That the regiment they belonged to had double pay, and much better cloathing than the native Spaniards, all of whom he wished at the devil, for a pack of bigotted thieves, without life or soul in them: why sailor, man, they cannot drink more than a sparrow, a couple of porones of wine would set a whole company

pany of grenadiers mad, and the carcase of a sheep surfeit a squadron of horse; but it is not so with us, my lad; and faith, boy, I am sorry I did not bring a piece of bacon out of my haversack with me; but, however, here's to you."

The greatest part of the corporal's harangue was very true, and his being a Swiss was of infinitely more benefit to our hero than he could have got from a dozen Spaniards, in regard to the business in hand, to which they sat very lovingly, till our hero thought it time to take his leave, being not much edified by his company, though by no means a loser by the entertainment he got in it, the expence of which rising in the corporal's stomach, he began to threaten our hero in a jargon between Spanish and High Dutch, that if he did not list immediately, he should be tossed in a blanket, till they got as much money out of his trouzers as would pay the honest man of the house; who was a great stickler for the corporal, and all along very solicitous for our hero's entering into the Spanish service; but as our hero and the corporal did not understand one another very clearly at the beginning, the latter declined so much in his speech and fight, in the end, that he was quite unintelligible; and accordingly he took that opportunity of dismissing himself from both him and his landlord, threatening with full as much magnanimity as the corporal had done, that if he was detained there on any account, as it was upon the serjeant of the guard's invitation

tation that he came thither, that he would complain to the English consul, to whom he was going; and upon whose application to the governor he was sure they would get little thanks, for attempting to trapan a subject belonging to the crown of England into their service.

His host did not approve of the method taken to discharge the reckoning, but swearing, without any probability of a conclusion, cursed the English consul, and the whole nation in general; which compliments were returned in as ample a manner, though not so distinguishably to be heard, on his most catholick majesty, and all belonging to him, not excepting the landlord and corporal, whom our hero left to settle their accounts as soon as the last should recover.

This incident would not have taken so much room, had it not been on purpose to shew, that this method of seducing foreigners into their service, is a common practice in Spain, but more particularly at sea-ports, and by this way of inveigling unwary sailors into their company, they either persuade them to list, or swear them out of their liberty, on the testimony of persons procured to listen to their conversation; and our hero has assured me, that in the time he was in that kingdom, he had seen an hundred lusty English sailors, who had been taken in the very same trap the serjeant and corporal had laid for him; especially the mates of two Bristol ships, one of whom had been kidnapped at Alicant, and the other

M

at

at Cadiz; whom he found in a common Spanish battalion of foot at Barcelona; which gave him great concern, as he always had a regard for sea-faring men, on account of their downright honesty and courage; and for whose caution he has particularly given this account to prevent their ruin; too often the consequence of such villainous stratagems.

End of the THIRD BOOK.

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM.
BOOK IV.

OUR hero now imagining that all his troubles were at an end, and expecting to return home by the first English ship he should meet with at Barcelona, and that he should not want any more negotiations with priests or friars, reflected, with a very grateful sense, on the many kindnesses he had received from those fraternities, especially on those of his compassionate Italian; and would gladly return the obligations he was under to him, in quite another way than barely acknowledging them in this history, was it in his power so to do: but as to their forms and ceremonies, which were matters of compulsory compliance in him, they ended with his journey; and as he was once more among some of his protestant countrymen, he thought fit to renounce that obedience he had occasionally paid to the see of Rome; and in the first place sold

at Cadiz; whom he found in a common Spanish battalion of foot at Barcelona; which gave him great concern, as he always had a regard for sea-faring men, on account of their downright honesty and courage; and for whose caution he has particularly given this account to prevent their ruin; too often the consequence of such villainous stratagems.

End of the THIRD BOOK.

THE
HISTORY
OF A
PILGRIM.
BOOK IV.

OUR hero now imagining that all his troubles were at an end, and expecting to return home by the first English ship he should meet with at Barcelona, and that he should not want any more negotiations with priests or friars, reflected, with a very grateful sense, on the many kindnesses he had received from those fraternities, especially on those of his compassionate Italian; and would gladly return the obligations he was under to him, in quite another way than barely acknowledging them in this history, was it in his power so to do: but as to their forms and ceremonies, which were matters of compulsory compliance in him, they ended with his journey; and as he was once more among some of his protestant countrymen, he thought fit to renounce that obedience he had occasionally paid to the see of Rome; and in the first place sold

his beads, and his deliverer St. Antonio, to an old devotee, upon his assurance of their being equally serviceable to him, by the manner, and to the religious purposes he would apply them; at the same time extolling the unlimited power and efficacy of the saint he had purchased, over storms and shipwrecks; quoting our hero as an example: however for a time he found it difficult enough to avoid making some discoveries of the religion he had borrowed, by invoking the holy virgin and all saints; names too frequently made use of as a test for both their oaths and prayers, in that country. It was then our hero was informed where the ships lay, by the merchant he had dealt with for his saint and beads; and accordingly went to the Mole, the place where they lay at an anchor.

The first person he commenced an acquaintance with, was one Thomas Davys, who the officer of the guard informed him was his countryman. Tom kept an house of entertainment very much frequented by sailors from all countries, but especially from England and Ireland; to this landlord and countryman came our hero, in an old ragged waistcoat, with one shirt only, (luckily a chequered one) by the colour of it beyond all mathematical calculation, how long it might have been since it was washed; and with but one halfpenny remaining of all the cash he had collected by his industry and application.

The man of the house was a brisk, well-looking little fellow, but his wife was a monster of a woman, with a face as red as the sun, and half

half as large ; her skin, of a natural mahogany colour, her eyes without motion, and her tongue never quiet ; with an immoderate long nose, carbuncled on both sides. He saluted his landlord and his consort very complaisantly, at the same time calling for a porrone of wine, and something to eat. The good woman, it is believed, had no better opinion of his countenance than he had of her's, and replied with a most convincing sneer, " We have nothing ready in the house, but the gentleman had better go out and buy something for himself : " though she might as well have desired him to purchase one of the galleons. He made no other answer, than that a bit of bread would do for the present ; which, after about half an hour's consideration, she sent to him ; but of such a size, that indisputably she was of doctor Mendoza's opinion, that by his looks he had not long to live, and consequently, very little provision would serve his turn.

After he had sat about an hour alone, his landlord Tom made his entry into his little apartment, where he was discernably placed, with an intent, no doubt, to prevent his walking off unperceived, particularly by his landlady, who never passed by the door, but she dropped a very significant courtesy to that purpose, and at the same time took a very regular view of him.

His landlord and he had entered into deep discourse, which, on the landlord's part, turned chiefly on inquiring, how he came into that country, how long he had been there, what his name was, and where he proposed going ; of which he gave him an account tolerably orthodox,

dox, and shewed him his passport; which, he confessed, being no scholar, he did not understand, “but supposed our hero knew how to make the best use of it, as such sort of people as he generally did.” A sufficient intimation to conclude, that he could not make much of it with him; which put our hero in mind of inquiring more expeditiously about the English consul, and what other families of that nation resided in Barcelona; and how often English vessels came into that harbour, telling him, that he hoped he should be soon sent home in one of them, being the son of a gentleman in London, with whom he did not doubt but that his honour the consul might by some means or other have been acquainted; and hoped he should be able to prevail on him to supply him with necessaries, till a convenient opportunity might offer for his sending him away; intimating to his friend Tom, that any favour he should shew him in the interim would not be lost; at the same time requesting credit for a day or two, till he could get an opportunity of seeing the consul.

The wine Tom had got while he was absent from him, and what he drank with him on his return, began to work pretty well, and he very affectionately promised to grant him his request, bidding him, “Drink sparingly, unless with himself; and that if Molly, his landlady, should be a little outrageous, not to mind her; for tho’ she would be sometimes in a devilish bad humour, especially as to trusting, yet at other times, she was as good-natured a creature as ever lived; and if she liked her company, God bless the woman, she would take an hearty sup herself.”

And

And to shew that the first part of her character was true, she having listened in the next room, to their whole conversation, bawled out, "Don't trust that fellow for two-pence; a pretty figure in troth he makes, to procure credit upon his father's gentility; I say, don't trust him, you oaf; sure if the devil was ever in a man he has taken possession of you: what, sling away my substance upon an half-starved skeleton, with a face and beard enough to frighten a captain of a man of war and his whole crew, from the Black Lion; a fine piece of furniture for such an house as our's indeed; turn the vagabond out, and let him be a link-boy to some undertaker; for the devil a drop more. No, I tell you once for all, not one drop more shall he get here." And then she squatted herself down between Tom and his guest, putting him in mind of some person she said was such another half-pay gentleman as himself; and had tricked her out of a month's diet and lodging, and prayed most fervently that the curse of Heaven might light on him and all such travelling vagabonds; his well-disposed landlord, now and then dropping a few queries; as, "Do you see now? Did you ever know the like? Is not this what I told you? Don't you think the woman is bewitched? but I will find out what sort of a devil haunts her;" and without any more ifs or ands, flung all the wine on the table in her face; an act of heroism, nothing could have made him perform so inimitably well, as the plentiful dose he had taken of it that morning; though, it is believed, that by her acquiescing in the manner she did, under so extraordinary a washing, that Tom, at

some other times had amused her in the same manner; for, to do her justice, she only sobbed a little; and with some few marks of conspiracy against our hero, left the room with great taciturnity.

In the mean time, he took care to make the best advantage he could of his landlord's proffers; and asked him to accommodate him with a shirt; which was accordingly provided for him that instant; and indeed it was of no small importance to him to improve the opportunity for fear of a change in the government, should his friend leave off drinking, or drink quite too much; both of them equally dangerous, as to his courage, or its effects.

Thus far he thought he had acted very prudently, and with his new piece of furniture, the shirt, he sallied out towards the shipping, for fear the enemy should rally; having observed his landlady to reconnoitre him several times after she had retreated. He had not been long making his observations on the Mole, before he was informed, that a large English ship had come to anchor in the bay the night before; which was no small satisfaction to him; and being furnished with this account, he returned into the city, and inquired where the consul lived, intending forthwith to pay him a visit: and having left his landlord for a while, who, in all probability might, after a little composure, have at least received some verbal chastisement from his wife; he congratulated himself on the thoughts of going to an English consul, who possibly might have been misrepresented to him: for, during their conversation over a
bottle,

bottle, he had sounded his friend Tom in regard to his perfections; which, by his account, were not of the most amiable kind; though he really had so much to say for himself, in order to move him to a sense of pity, that he was under no apprehensions of not succeeding with him; and when he came to the house he found that he was at dinner, and accordingly he waited below stairs; and meeting with his coachman, he entered into conversation with him; and finding that he was born in London, he thought it no bad incident in his way; upon which, he began to enquire of him about the consul, supposing that by this means, he might find out his honour's usual treatment of people in his circumstances.

The coachman seemed to be overloaded with that kind of disagreeable bluntness, which too often appears in many of his countrymen in that low way of life, and took little or no notice of his conversation; but went on with a parcel of queries and responses, such as, "How could he tell? Do you think I deal with the devil? Would you have me be a conjuror? Do you think my master tells me his business? if that be the case, you are damnably mistaken; my master is sometimes crabbed enough; he has been plaguily bit, and can't endure the face of a stroller." And a great many more speeches to the same purport; all which our hero took to be negatives pregnant. But thinking to make sure of his interest, (if any he had with the consul) he furnished him with the same account he had communicated to his landlord, in regard to his coming thither, and the hardships he had under-

gone; but he still continued in the same state of disregard, both to the historian and his history; and, at the end of his complaints, told him, "That he believed he had run himself out of wind;" recommending it to him to walk quietly off; for that he must lock the stable-door, and that it was not customary to leave any stranger in the yard at that time of the day; especially as he could have no opportunity of seeing the consul till about evening. This our hero took to be a bad omen; having made it his constant observation on his mendicant travels, that what reception he got from servants, was a specimen of what he was to expect from their masters.

In the pursuit of our hero's conversation with the coachman, he told him, "That he was a poor stranger, without so much as a penny to buy bread with, nor did he know where to go; and should be greatly obliged to him, if he would suffer him to stay at the stairs-foot, till he came down again." To which he gave no answer, but went away, leaving him at discretion to do as he thought convenient in that respect.

This kind of reception from a servant, threw him into reflections that shocked him so much, that hungry as he was, it took away his appetite; so that when the coachman came again to him, and notwithstanding his blunt way of speaking, brought him some bread and meat of his own procuring, he could not taste either; but being well acquainted with the nature and uses of a reservoir on such occasions, he very prudently put it into his pocket, waiting for the
consul,

consul, who came down soon after dinner, and was readily known by the descriptions he had received of him from his coachman; one of his clerks came likewise with him, and neither of them could pass by unobserved, the place he took his stand in being directly in the passage to the street, of no larger extent than a centinel's box.

The consul avoided, as much as he could, taking any notice of him at all; but upon our hero's addressing him in such terms, as possibly he had not met with before, from one who made so despicable an appearance, he at last stopped, and gave him an opportunity of relating, that he was his unfortunate countryman, the son of a gentleman of a considerable estate, and a great deal more, which he had sufficient authority to say, in regard to his father and family; acquainting him with his being taken prisoner at Vigo, and of some of the consequences of it, relating to himself; adding to the rest, as he thought, in the most affecting manner, that he was in the lowest and most abject distress, without cloaths, money, or so much as a place to lie in; and that he hoped his honour would take some compassion of him, assuring him, that all his misfortunes were the effect of his youth and indiscretion, and the unhappy occasions of the poor figure he made: a miserable dress, for one who had formerly appeared as well as the very man he was begging from! The bitterness of his own sentiments, and the terms they were expressed in, made him shed tears plentifully; a way of discovering his grief, I have heard him say, he made as little use of

as perhaps any man under the like circumstances : but in answer to all this, which must have moved an heart that had not totally lost the faculty of sensation, the consul with a very stern countenance, told him, that by his appearance, he did not by any means look like such a person as he would represent himself to be ; and that he had relieved and cloathed several, who had made use of the same stratagems with his to induce him to it, who afterwards sold the very cloaths he had provided for them, and entered into the Spanish service again ; so that for his part he had made an unalterable resolution, not to give the least encouragement or assistance to any such sort of petitioners again, and desired him to go about his business. But our hero still followed him, and as loud as he could, intreated him for God's sake not to let him suffer, on account of his having been imposed on by others, for that such an object of compassion, he was sure, never had presented itself to him before ; but all would not do, nor did either the consul or his clerk vouchsafe to give him one farthing : and though the consul might have been deceived in some instance or other before, he then had so reasonable an application made to him, that nothing less than insensibility could have made him continue in such a determined want of charity ; and doubtless his clerk must have been composed of flint instead of clay, or, he must have bestowed something on a wretch in his condition, especially as he could have no suggestions of the same nature with the consul's, to prevent him from doing so common an act of humanity. All which our hero desires, may be taken

taken as a caution not to trust abroad too peremptorily on the assistance of even such as it might most reasonably be expected from; which advice is grounded on his experience not in this instance only.

This usage confirmed all the suspicion he had from what fell from his landlord Tom's discourse, in relation to the consul; and made him think that he had parted with his beads and St. Antonio too soon, by whose means he had received more charity from strangers, than he had great reason to believe, he should do under the most pressing necessities from some of his countrymen: however he still kept to his own determined resolution, not to be quite cast down, let what adversity would attack him, comforting himself with the thoughts of its not being impossible to get back to England again, without the consul's assistance, in some other ship that might put into the harbour, though he should miss the opportunity of sailing in that which then lay out in the bay.

In this dilemma he returned back to his friend Tom's again; whose house by the time he got to it, was full of English sailors, who came on shore from the ship just now mentioned, which was a London vessel bound to Naples: he had not been long there, before his landlady, from whom he expected a fine rally, introduced him to the sailors; doubtless as a good hand for the service of the house, on such an occasion, under the stile and title of a "poor, honest countryman of theirs, who was a little out of the elbows indeed, and not in a fit dress for such company; but really one that
seemed,

seemed, as bad as his case was, to be a downright hearty fellow, and had made her husband drunk often enough over his comical stories, which she was sure would make them laugh heartily too, if they would admit him into company; with, well poor young man, my hearty service to you, and better luck."

The honest sailors, all to a man, bade him sit down, with a shake of the fist, a little too rough for him, who had not an ounce of flesh on his hands, crying out, now and then, "S'blood, don't be cast down, wind and tide do not serve always alike, at the stern to-day, and at the head to-morrow; if the wind be in your teeth now, you must try t'other tack, and may be, messmate, the other trip may be better; she won't always carry her top and top-gallant sail; we must sometimes reef a bit, and lie under her fore^ssail: s'blood, what if she's brought gunnel to, helm-a-lee, and she is in her geers. There's our boatswain now, I remember him to fall over-board at St. Kitt's, he swam ashore like an half-drowned rat, and now the dog has a skin as sleek as the best of us. Come, messmate, drink about, tide will be out before we shall be able to get half our loading in."

This was no unacceptable command to him, and, as an interlude to their love-songs, which were somewhat tedious, our hero now and then gave them a passage or two out of the history of his travels, which had so great an effect on them, that by the thumps and blows he received on his stomach, he narrowly escaped being murdered, out of pure love and affection.

Their

Their landlord was at the head of this facetious company, as complete a toast-master as their hearts could wish for, and as he found our hero had gained the affections of his messmates, would bawl out to them, "Come, brothers, here is better success to the young fellow, he knows where, (meaning the consul) damn it the boy won't be poor always, and take notice, Tom of the Mole tells him so; cheer up, there is life in a muscle, my lad."

At length, the company, as they termed it, being pretty tight braced, our hero's landlord, at the instigation of his wife, called him aside, to know whether he had seen the consul, and what encouragement he had met with from him; he told him very chearfully that all things were mighty well, and that his honour had promised to send him to England by the first opportunity; and had ordered him to diet and lodge with him till there was one. Tom shook him very heartily by the hand, telling him, it was more than he expected, as he might easily guess from the intimation he had given him before: but his good wife, who was all the time list'ning, swore a whole volley of oaths, contrary to Tom's annotations, most vehemently asserting, that she knew it would be just as our hero had said; for, "That his honour, God bless him, was a mighty charitable, good man, and that he shewed it by the notice he had taken of him; protesting, that he should not have wanted any thing, her little habitation afforded, whether he had given such directions or not, with pray Mr. George drink heartily with those honest souls."

All

All this sun-shine he knew must end in a terrible storm; and as his malignant star still governed, it was more expeditious than ordinary, in shewing its influence at this time; for though he thought himself secure enough of his landlord that day, on account of the company and quantity of wine stirring, yet some one belonging to the consul happened to come into the house, and the natural inquisitive temper of his landlady induced her to ask him what reception our hero got from the consul. The person to whom she applied for this unfortunate secret, told her, that he heard that the consul had ordered him to go about his business; and that his coachman was desired not to suffer him to be about the stables any more.

Our hero had not the least suspicion of their ill-timed conversation, but upon his landlady's coming into the company, he could not help taking notice of a visible change in her countenance and carriage to him; for fixing, till that time, her lifeless eyes on him, with a surprizing extension of her face, she asked, "If her lodger had finished the pleasant stories he had been telling all the morning; for, as good a knack as he had at that sport, they would find that all he had said was not gospel; that some people would find out some people by degrees; and, God help her, as she told nothing but what was true herself, she never suspected other folks." And giving Tom a commanding nod to leave the company, he was soon confirmed in what he expected from her first appearance; for his landlord was ordered to post away directly to the consul's, and to inform himself from him of

our

our hero's situation there ; which the consul assured him was quite the reverse of what had been reported to him, with this addition, that at first he suspected him to be a cheat, but now he was confirmed in that opinion by the attempt he made on him.

Tom ran home in a violent hurry, and after some short, but loud conversation with his wife, called our hero out of company, where he might have sat till doomsday, without the want of a pipe, or being dry ; but as soon as he had left them, his landlady, ready prepared to reward him for the usage she had, not long before, received from her husband on his account, flung an whole jug full of wine, ready drawn for the company, directly in his face, and cut his forehead with the vessel.

Tom, quite speechless, sprung from his seat like a rope-dancer, to take his part of the satisfaction, but being of a very diminutive size, was laid sprawling at once ; and immediately, the whole posse of sailors sallied out, and seeing our hero bloody, and the wine running down the wrong way, like true tars, engaged on his side, against Tom, his heroine, and several Spaniards, whom they beat very heartily ; leaving Tom and his wife, to all outward appearance, beyond hopes of recovery.

Our hero received no great damage, but looked as if he had been dragged out of a wine-fatt, and the Spaniards were so roughly handled, that instead of making any farther use of their hands, they had recourse to their beads ; and the croud increasing, the sailors, by the assistance of their outlasses, and weapons they called oaken-towels, marched

marched in triumph to their boat, not staying even to settle their reckoning, fearing they should be overpowered; which infallibly they must have been, had they not been so near their boat; and it being customary, time immemorial, to have skirmishes among a great many sailors, and a great deal of wine, without much notice taken of the consequences, it was not thought worth any one's trouble to stop them in their retreat.

However, our hero was left behind to pay and account for the whole, and upon an hue and cry of murder was taken up and put into the custody of the light-house guard, and on a common report of the death of his landlady, lodged in the city-gaol next morning, dressed in claret and rags, and honoured with the titles of English heretick and murderer. Here again he was left to his former pensive lucubrations, with the addition of murder; and although he stood a small trial for a supposed crime of the same nature, yet the consequences of this were much greater; and however true it was, that he most devoutly wished, that his landlord's wife might come to an untimely end, he did not by any means approve of being accounted the occasion of it; and what added, if any thing could add to his distress, was, that it was out of his power to get information in the gaol, whether she had made her exit or not; there being none but himself in that part of the gaol where he was, being a cell particularly set apart for such as were committed for murder.

At length, on his removal to another part of the prison, and being informed that his landlady was recovered, not without some intimations, that

that the most part of her illness was a fiction, he wrote a very submissive letter to her husband, assuring him, that the most violent part of their abuse came from the sailors, whom he knew to be very ungovernable in their liquor; with some, though not the sincerest expressions of concern, for the poor, helpless good woman, who fell a victim to their inhumanity; concluding, that he hoped, that notwithstanding what had happened he would let him see him.

His landlord was in himself a very humane man, and it is reasonable to suppose, would not have kept him an hour in gaol had it not been for his wife, who was determined on revenging the treatment she had received on his account, by prosecuting him at any rate; however, whether she thought a fortnight's imprisonment a sufficient reparation for her chastisement, or not, it is not much matter; but toleration was given to Mr. Thomas Davys to pay him a visit in gaol, to his great comfort, without the favour of any other company; where after some considerable expostulations on his part, and all condescension on that of our hero's, he consented to his discharge; and in some time after, he was turned out of gaol, an absolute dependant on providence.

The consequences of this unexpected quarrel made him think it quite endless to use any further endeavours to extricate himself from his misfortunes; he was sensible that he had no reason to make any farther applications to the consul, and believed that the noise which had been made about the quarrel, would of consequence prevent him from getting assistance
from

from any of his countrymen; so that in short he was quite at a nonplus, and had no support whatsoever but what he got in common among the beggars of the town; and being informed by some of that fraternity, that there was one Reynolds an Irish merchant, of a very charitable disposition, who lived at the further end of the city, he thereupon went to his house, and after some little time got an opportunity of meeting with him and two other gentlemen; and expecting that upon his addressing himself to them, they would of course ask him, why he did not rather apply to the consul than to them? he told them voluntarily after what manner he had been treated by him, letting them know, that rather than be a burthen to any one, that he was willing to work at any sort of labour, let the consideration be what it would. He believed by their whispering, that they were not strangers to the consul's conduct upon such occasions, especially as they made no reply to that part of his discourse; but in regard to themselves, they told him, they should readily comply with his request, as to employing him; but that being an Englishman and a protestant, he would get but very bad usage from such of the Spaniards as they constantly dealt with, nor did they believe that they would consent to join in any work with him.

They asked him a great many questions, to some of which he did not think it necessary to give a full answer; and avoided all other accounts of himself, than that he was a sailor, and had been cast away, and was then in a very necessitous condition, and must stay at Barcelona,

Iona, till he might get an opportunity of returning to England. They gave themselves no trouble as to advising him what steps he was to take to bring his intentions to bear, but by some distant inuendo's, which he readily understood, they let him know their opinion of the consul's behaviour to others on the like occasion; and gave him some money, with which he supported himself in as parsimonious a manner as could be, paying a penny a night for his lodging; and when it was spent, was reduced to lie, and that by extraordinary permission, sometimes in their guard-rooms, and at other times in such of their churches as he found open; but more particularly in the yard of one which was a sanctuary for refugees of all kinds, and some nights he used to lie within the rails of the high altar of it; where, one morning, at break of day, he observed an old woman, kneeling at an altar on one side of him, who pulled a band-box from under her mantle with a black silk cover over it, and fetching some holy water from one of the fountains, sprinkled what was contained in the box with it, beating her breast, and lamenting very heavily; and after saying several Pater-noster's and Ave-Maria's, she took out what was in the box, and held it up opposite to the image of the Virgin Mary, for a little time, and then put it into the box again, and there left it.

As soon as she was gone, he went to the box, and in it found a dead infant, with a written inscription on the breast of it, "Holy Mary, mother of God, receive this child," he supposed it to be an illegitimate one; but finding

ing no marks of violence, concluded, it might have died suddenly, and that she who took her farewell of it, designed to have done it with as much privacy, as, in all probaility, it was ushered into the world; however he did not approve of staying to see the consequences of the old woman's piety; but, with all expedition, left it to the result of her prayers, especially as his early devotion and appearance were both of such an extraordinary complexion, as might have rather brought him under a suspicion of being the child's executioner, than its father.

Though our hero's affair with his landlord was to all appearance at an end, and his circumstances so very wretched, yet he could not endure the sight of his house, particularly on account of some part of the furniture; but continued to strole up and down the city, and now and then picked up a sailor, he having found out other places of their rendezvous within the gate; and by sometimes interpreting for them, and at others, shewing them the curiosities of the town, he now and then got some little matter from them, besides a reasonable share of liquor; and, at length, became acquainted with an elderly English woman, the widow of an English serjeant, who sold wine privately; she was mistress of part of a little house near the citadel, and the most part of her customers were soldiers, and at work, or on duty there; a great many of them being imployed in repairing the ramparts, and others in raising a new battery; part of which work was to be done by the soldiers, and part by the country labourers; by much application he prevailed on the

the man to whom the greatest part of the house belonged (who was a Frenchman) to let him lie there; and over whom, it is thought, his countrywoman had some influence towards his obtaining that favour.

She was mistress of a borrachio or two of wine, had some room utensils, and a tolerable gown and mantle for Sundays and holidays, but the rest of the week was not much better cloathed than himself; which sort of dress she made use of, as an instance of her poverty, to prevent her paying the usual duties for selling of wine; though she was far from being in the condition she represented, and yet so penurious, that she would not have trusted St. Peter with a real of plate, nor all her countrymen in Spain with a porone of wine, though there was no want of application to her for so comfortable an ingredient; in short, her age and countenance were barriers against incontinency, and her covetousness so extraordinary great, that it was impossible to make a beneficial alliance with herself or her borrachio; so that whosoever could have been so void of grace as to have attempted either, would have undertaken a pursuit of what would bring him neither profit or pleasure; and the only benefit our hero, by the utmost of his addresses could obtain, was by her means getting acquainted with her messmate the Frenchman, who introduced him into other scenes of life, bad enough, though somewhat better than those he had lately passed through.

The Frenchman was superintendant of the works then going on at the citadel, having been formerly

formerly a bombadier in the service of that country; who seeing our hero idle about the house, asked him if he would enter into work, by which he might get eight pence a day; he was very glad of such an offer, and accordingly went with him next morning to the citadel, and there at the price before-mentioned, added one to the number of a parcel of the ugliest mortals that ever worked above, or under ground, in caps, shirts and drawers made of blue linen, with a natural deformity in their countenances, by many degrees exceeding that of a Newcastle collier.

His particular part of the work was to carry sand in a basket on his shoulders, from an heap at some distance, to the top of the battery, which from the narrow passage leading to it, could not be done after any other manner; a work more irksome than any other, from the pressure it made on his left shoulder, which so over-ponderated the other; and was so terribly galled, that in a very few days he became quite crooked, with the loss of part of his skin; but a more mortifying circumstance than any was, the abuse he received from the Spaniards, who were at the same work with him; and as they found him more and more disabled, the greater load they would put into their own baskets, and on the footing of ostentation, they laboured most indefatigably; boasting, that a Spaniard could do twice as much work as an Englishman; and though he exercised himself beyond measure, to shew them how false such a slur was on his industrious countrymen, he was at length so bruised and maimed, that he was forced to retire

retire from his new occupation, with such a dislocation in his shoulder, that he would have been very glad of a recipe from the hands of his French surgeon, at least, for a birth in one of the hospitals, whose practice he exploded so much.

Several of the train of artillery were stationed in this work, conformable to such part of it as more particularly belonged to the gunners, with whom, as they were most of them foreigners, he chose to converse, rather than with the natives.

They informed him, that there were three companies of matrosses on duty in Barcelona, and that if he would take on in that service, which was more reputable than a day labourer, as he must have seen by their appearance and way of living, they would ingage for his being taken into one of the best companies belonging to the service of the train, at the pay of a real of plate a day. This offer put him on a very serious debate, whether he ought to accept or refuse it; tho' their service at any rate was what he utterly detested, having experienced every branch of it, except that of the train of artillery; nor did he indeed expect much amendment there.

On the other side of the question, he knew there was very little probability of getting home, as there was no hopes of the consul's assisting him, or the governor's giving him a licence for that purpose; one or both of which were indispensibly necessary; nor was he capable of working any longer; but his chief reason for entering into their service again was, that as some of

N

the

the train of artillery was constantly on duty there, he could not fail of getting an opportunity of writing from thence to his father, in order to his procuring him a discharge, by his interest at home ; which, at the time he left it, was not inconsiderable ; so that the result of his deliberations was, to list into the service of the train of artillery, and at once, from a beggar, become a gentleman matross : and accordingly he was introduced by the Frenchman to a serjeant on duty at the citadel ; who brought him to his captain, whose name was Peter Savoigne ; and having stood the previous questions of what countryman he was, and whether he had ever been in the Spanish service before, and the like, the last of which queries he thought it absolutely necessary to answer in the negative ; he stuck to the occupation of a sailor, and being informed that the captain was a very good sort of a man, and made no difference or exceptions to countries or religions, he told him he was an Englishman ; and his captain, without troubling himself about his faith or hope, sent for the surgeon of the regiment, as is the constant custom there, especially in regard to such as are taken into the train service, in order for their being searched and tried, if they are of strength and ability sufficient for the employment, free from distortion, and had a full use of their limbs ; which indeed, saving that he had lost some of the skin of his left shoulder, and had undergone a tedious and emaciating lent, he perfectly had.

Being returned by the surgeon, sano in el quерpo, he was taken into the company, and
after-

afterwards he found the duty hard enough; for, from thenceforward, he was constantly on guard or exercising; and when not so, imployed in firing, pointing, levelling, or scouring the cannon and mortars, which are very laborious exercises, and shewed the reasonableness of their searching such as are taken into that branch of their service.

At his first being entertained he was used with great contempt, some of such as were now his brother matrosses, remembering the sorrowful figure he made under his basket of sand, and his incapacity of working as well as some others did at the time he carried it, which, together with the raggedness of his late appearance, were so remarkable, that the appellation of Lazarillo d'Angleterre, was fixed on him; and till his whiskers began to bud, and the smartness of the cock of his hat had added a little of the soldier to him, he was a mere soliloquist, not one of the company thinking it worth their while to have any conversation at all with him.

However, at last he began to converse with one of his serjeants, who was a Swiss, and had learned to talk English not quite unintelligibly; and by his means, he was frequently put on the out-guards, which was no disagreeable part of his duty; and on that account had sometimes an opportunity of running a skin of wine, the price of which, within the walls of the city, was, on account of an entrance duty, very great, and without the gates very reasonable; so that by our hero's trafficking in that trade, he sometimes got a little money, but at all times a better allowance of wine.

His captain, if a Swiss can be said to be of any religion, was a Roman, but quite free from the Spanish bigotry: however, that our hero's regimentals might be uniform, and it was of the utmost consequence that they should be so, in regard to such as were Spaniards, and in the same company with him, he furnished himself with another pair of beads, which he made use of as necessity required, without their former companions, St. James, or St. Antonio.

He had not been in the regiment long, before he was ordered on the Mole guard, which was near his landlord Tom's house; and being now a gentleman of some figure, such an one as that neither his money or word would be suspected or denied for a bottle of wine, he paid his old friend Tom a visit, by whom he was received with profound respect, and a profession of an hearty welcome both from him and his wife, but more particularly from her, who upon sight told him, "that he now looked something like a christian gentleman; no thanks to the consul, the greatest scrub, churl, and-bite in all Catalonia; and for all his great alls, the king of Spain had as handsome and good men, and as much money as any king of England, nay, as good as king George himself, no thanks to him neither; and God bless Mr. George he is as much like my uncle Saul as ever one apple was to another; dost thou not think he is Tommy? why you remember our Saul, the like of him was not to be found in the regiment of dragoons he belonged to; well, but Mr. Gunner, you must pay beverage, indeed you must; well, commend me to good cloaths; why you are no
more

more like the man you was, when the drunken crew fell on my poor man and myself, than I am like the pope of Rome, God Almighty bless him; and I will tell you another thing too, we got in a fresh borachio yesterday; and what do you think but as how I swore, did I not Tommy, that no body should broach it but an Englishman?" Upon this, under the seal of a long kiss from his landlady, and a squeeze by the hand from his landlord, their former preliminaries of peace were ratified and confirmed, which conclusion our hero imagined would at some time or other be of service to himself, in regard to a further correspondence he designed to settle with the sailors; and indeed he was no loser by the accommodation, for afterwards when any of the English sailors came thither to regale, our hero was most assuredly sent for; it being known by experience, of what great use he had been on those occasions; so that unless he was on guard or some other duty, he was constantly their agent and interpreter, or factor, to a company too who did not forget to recompense him for his trouble; and really whatever other uses were made of his agency, it was of service to them very often in the preservation of both their lives and money; for whenever their vessels were over-stored with liquor at night, (at which time he was in his barrack) they were most assuredly stranded or shipwrecked at some stew or other for want of a pilot, and our hero sent for the next morning to set them a-drift; the inhabitants of the strands they were drove on, bearing great respect to the gentlemen of the train, who were often centinels at a powder-

magazine not far from them; and indeed, various were the accidents and misfortunes which happened on these occasions to his countrymen and brother sailors; amours, fervent amours, attended with stripes and robberies; not an hat, buckle or handkerchief, or scarce the remnant of a speckled shirt to be seen, felt, heard, or understood; all lost in an invisible robbery, not a person to be found, male or female, who had treated them so uncivilly, on alas-a-day, such innocent recreations: when the offender was found, the sufferers were sometimes redressed by the management of our hero at the governor's, unless some Dulcinea pleaded an amour in bar, and then prudence compounded the felony.

Upon these brotherly occasions, notwithstanding the regard shewn to the gentlemen in that service, he was sometimes in great danger of being assassinated; for the province of Catalonia in general is inhabited by the most desperate people, and Barcelona, in particular of all the kingdom of Spain; there you may hire persons called *Bandelero's*, who undertake murder at a stated price; a set of villains that wear poniards and stiletto's for that use, the last of which is a weapon of about six inches long, and square in the fashion of a glover's needle, and not much larger; so that the wound they occasion is scarce visible, and, for the most part, mortal, by the orifice's being so small that there is no vent for the blood to follow when they are drawn out, nor can the wound be probed afterwards.

Sometimes twenty of these wretches are executed at a time, though it is very dangerous to
attack

attack or prosecute them at any rate, from the revenge which has often been taken on such as have been instrumental to their conviction; after they have suffered death on the gallows, their heads are hung up, and their limbs fixed on hooks round it, where they remain four or five days in publick view, within the square of the market, and from thence are afterwards taken down by the executioner, and by him carried in a sack to a place about a mile from Barcelona called the Cadavera, a little square surrounded with a wall about ten feet high, and open at the top; where, through spike-holes made on purpose, may be seen, by any one that has savage curiosity enough, the most horrid spectacle to human nature; and surely, of all people, Spaniards are the most implacable in their revenge, and severe in their punishments, executed without any sort of remorse, and not to be ended with the loss of life; for gibbetting, or quartering are the constant appendixes to the rope; though let it arise from what foundation it will, their malefactors die with less concern for themselves, or pity from the spectators, than probably in any other part of the christian world; and the attendance on these, one would think, most melancholy occasions, is the merest farce that was ever acted.

The dress of the principal actors in this scene of execution, is a black canvas gown that reaches to the ground, with a cap of the same, made in the form of a sugar-loaf about a foot high, their faces are covered with a broad flap, which falls from the cap to their chins, on each side of it they fix two glasses, the size of those

of spectacles; and thus equipped, with dishes placed on the tops of poles, filled with brimstone and oil burning, they traverse round the foot of the gallows, shouting in a most horrid manner, now and then whispering to the persons who are to be executed; some of whom are often so transported at what these gallows penitents say, that they run up the ladder in perfect raptures, waiting with an enthusiastick smile till the executioner comes to do his office.

Our hero was present at an execution of this sort, when sixteen of those who are called Miquelets were to be hanged, one of whom was their ringleader or captain, and had been a notorious offender against the government; the person on whose testimony he was principally convicted, was one of these disciplinarians whose office it is to impose on these sort of wretches, by telling them that by the dresses of humiliation they appear in, and the voluntary prayers they offer up for them, they are not only propitiators for the informations they gave against them, but for the crimes they are to suffer for; and that by the intercessions they make for them in that manner, the time of their being in purgatory will be shortened.

He took notice that the chief or captain who was mentioned before, had frequent conversation with these disciplinarians; and when he had got two or three steps up the ladder, called very loud to one of them, who came with all expedition to him, and clapping his ear to the criminal's mouth, in expectation of some further account of his life, the fellow drew a stiletto from his bosom, and stabbed the disciplinarian

rian to the heart; and afterwards committed the like act of cruelty on a venerable capuchin friar, who had some few minutes before exhorted him in a very pious manner, and doubtless gave him all the comfort he could in what the poor man thought his last moments, being placed just above him for that purpose.

The rope not being fastened to the gallows, the fellow jumped down among the rest, who were expecting the same fate with himself, who all broke loose at once, and with swords, bayonets, and poniards, killed or wounded such as opposed them; in the midst of whom was our hero, not a little terrified at what might happen from such resolute and desperate villains, firmly resolving, that if half his majesty of Spain's subjects were to be hanged, which he seems to think they deserve in that part of his dominions, he would never be an attendant on the like occasion again.

The chief malecontent, and several of the rest, after having killed some of the standers-by, made their escape, some of whom were retaken and broke alive on the wheel; at which cruel ceremony, conformable to our hero's resolutions, and the dictates of self-preservation, he was not present; but afterwards saw several of their excruciated bodies, hanging on gibbets upon the walls of the town. He has several times since told me, that his escape at that time seemed to be as great an instance of the goodness of providence as ever happened to him; where, had it not been for his being trampled on by the croud, and lying among numbers who were either murdered or wounded, the

most expeditious revenge would have been taken on him; some of those who were to have been executed, having been, not long before, apprehended by some of the soldiers of the garrison, and he, at that time, particularly remarkable by having his regimental cloaths on.

Our hero continued in this branch of their service above a year before he got a proper opportunity of writing to his father, which he then did by one Humphrys, mate of a ship belonging to captain Thompson, homeward bound from Leghorn to London; which letter was very faithfully delivered according to the directions of it.

And as he was quite tired of the way of life he was in, and consequently extremely anxious to return home, those reasons supplied him with ample matter to write on, and to exercise his pen in the most prevailing terms he could, to induce his father to the greater compassion; and accordingly he furnished him with the most moving account of great part of the sufferings he had undergone, and of the condition he was in; and intreated him to apply to one of the secretaries of state, or some nobleman, by whose interest he might be discharged from the Spanish service.

Upon the receipt of his letter, application was made by his father to Lord Carteret, who was then secretary of state, acquainting him of his condition and circumstances; Lord Carteret, out of his great goodness and compassion, wrote to Mr. Stanhope, now earl of Harrington, and late lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and who was at that time plenipotentiary at Madrid; and by his

his means and orders, he was, about eight months after he had sent to London, discharged from the Spanish service.

To the first of which noble lords, for want of some person to introduce him when he was lord-lieutenant of Ireland, he had no opportunity of returning his thanks; and to the last, when he was in the same high station, though he was inquired for by him in a very kind manner, he, on account of his being ill, was prevented from doing himself the honour of waiting on him; but with the most profound sense of gratitude, he does in this publick manner return both of their lordships his most humble acknowledgments for their distinguished favour and goodness in restoring him to his liberty.

It was near eight months before our hero got an answer to the letter he sent to his father, from which he apprehended that he was dead, or that something had prevented the letter's coming to his hands; so that he began to be out of hopes of succeeding in his application to him; but being in his turn on Mountjuick guard, and at that time advanced to the honour of a corporal, which was the highest military rank he ever arrived to, and even to that, on no other account as ever he could understand, but entirely on the recommendation of his serjeant-major, a Dutchman, with whom he had created a great intimacy, at the expence of the best part of some borrachio's of wine; the true exercise of which has raised many a private gentleman to honour of the like nature; and he being in this manner dignified and distinguished, was sent for by an orderly man on

guard at Barcelona, to leave his post at Mount-juick, and return home.

At the time the messenger came, he was gone from the fort into the country to buy a skin of wine; a trade that was attended with some small profit, unless the wine-merchant himself took too great a share of the commodity; and upon his return, which was much later than it ought to have been, under the protection of the rank he was then in, he was told that he had been sent for by a messenger-extraordinary from Barcelona.

His absence so long from his guard immediately remonstrated to him, that the courier brought letters of punishment, rather than any news that could be acceptable to him; and the stocks was a machine he had been so well acquainted with, and fasting so unpleasant an exercise, that he had some thoughts of taking another flight to some church for sanctuary: but, to his inexpressible joy, he was informed by the serjeant, that his discharge was come to the English consul, and orders accordingly were sent for relieving him from duty.

This was a surprise of such a nature, that he has told me, that nothing but a full jug of wine could have prevented the effects of, that is, the extraordinary consequences which often arise from excess of joy; and finding the contents of the jug very palatable, he repeated his application to it, being surrounded by the whole guard, with whom, and the serjeant, (it being contrary to orders to open the gates of the fort after sun-set) he spent that whole night; and indeed with such companions, being

ing all either Swiss or Dutch, as would have completely finished more wine than an whole battalion of Spaniards.

The serjeant at that time on duty, was not the same with whom he was so intimate, and from whose gracious smiles his honours took their rise, but one perfectly as well versed in his trade; could tell over his exploits at the battle of Almanza, in such an heroical manner, and with such assurances of truth, depending on oaths of a particular invention, that nothing but an unbelieving Jew could discredit him; he could repeat to a man, the names of persons of rank and distinction he had killed with his own right hand; he knew every regiment of the Portuguese that ran away, sent all the English in general to the devil for a pack of cowards and scoundrels, but very genteely vouchsafed, notwithstanding his national reflections, to let our hero know, he excepted him as a particular, and believed him to be one of a better sort, by the intimacy he had observed between him and his brother serjeant, with whom and himself he hoped soon to have a bout at a fresh borachio, that at which they were sitting being almost at an end, without doing any other execution than setting the whole guard either quarrelling or asleep, except the serjeant, his brother corporal, and himself, who jointly and severally laid an embargo on the remainder for their own use; and by the time it was proper to fire the notice gun for opening the fort^e gate, they had dispatched the whole cargo as stout as Hercules; and much better soldiers than general Stanhope;
with

with all the curses of bell, book and candle, light on the lord Gallway.

The exercise they had been at all night, did not by any means disqualify the serjeant from his natural propensity to pillaging; for before they parted, he exchanged his waistcoat, hat, and cockade with him, our hero's being fresher and better than his, pretending it was a perquisite belonging to every serjeant on the like occasions.

And being thus reduced a little, as to his rigging, he left the serjeant, and went directly to his captain, with an excuse ready prepared, for his not obeying his commands to that purpose the night before; which excuse was, that the serjeant of the guard was not well, and as he was the eldest corporal, he could not leave his duty; a finesis he was allowed to make use of as a recompence for the exchange, and a stake for a trial of skill at another borachio.

The captain, as he had all along done, behaved very courteously on this occasion, telling our hero, that he had been with the consul, and that he apprehended from some expressions which dropped from him, that his own indiscretion had brought him into the condition he was then in; and in a most gentleman-like and friendly manner desired him to have a caution for the future; allowing him what remained of his month's pay, and the liberty of wearing his regimental cloaths 'till he could be provided with others.

After this manner he took his leave of the Spanish service, being a soldier in it near eight years,

years, unless at such times as he deserted; from the severity and poverty of which, he hopes this history may, in some manner, be instrumental to keep some of his majesty's subjects; who when once seduced into it, have nothing to expect but the worst of treatment, under an improbability of ever getting from it, much less arriving at our hero's distinguished honour of being a corporal in the train of artillery.

Our hero was now to pay a second visit to the consul, and not forgetting his captain's observations on the conversation he had with him, he thought it would be a very good opportunity of reminding him of his former reception, being what he could never forget; and having returned the captain all the acknowledgments and thanks he could give him, which, and a great deal more he well deserved from him, he went directly to the consul's, and waiting some time after he had sent up his name to him, with the addition of Corporal, he renewed his acquaintance and conversation with his coachman, who received him, and all he said, in the same blunt, careless manner as he had done at their first interview; though our hero had laid aside the humility of stile he talked in before; telling him that he was discharged from the Spanish service by the English ambassador, and only wanted the consul's confirmation of an order sent to him for that purpose. To all which he received no other answer from the coachman, but "That it might be true for what he knew, but it was not probable at all; a very likely story indeed,

deed, that the English ambassador should have nothing else to do but write letters to one of the king of Spain's soldiers; God have mercy indeed! Why, my master the consul, now, would not put pen and ink to paper, to save the lives of all the straggling gentry from hence to Madrid; though I am sure his honour knows best what he has to do; but to tell you the truth, countryman, if you be one of that sort, I am half of a mind, that you will not get them same regimentals off so soon as you think for; and faith, for my share of the roast, I wish no better sport than that my head mayn't ache, do you see me, till the consul gives you new ones; however, I have nothing to say to that matter neither; and, in truth, I have something else to mind than soldiering or sailoring either, and so fare you well."

At length, being sent for by the consul, who, it is thought, did not remember him, especially as he was very inquisitive whether he could read or write; and asked him so closely about his family, and where he was born, things that he repeated to him several times, when he waited at first on him; which, and some few other inquiries, as soon as he had finished, he called for paper, and desired him to write his name; which he did, corresponding with the discharge he received from Mr. Stanhope.

The consul then began to alter his carriage a little, desiring him to sit down, and seemed very desirous to get a full account from him after what manner he had lived since he left England;

but

but at the same time told him, though he was satisfied that he was the person the discharge was designed for, and had received directions to cloath and diet him, yet it was to be after such a manner as he should think proper; and that he was not to expect either of them in an expensive, but on the contrary, in the most saving way, till some English vessel should arrive there, in which endeavours should be used to send him home a passenger.

The inuendo he gave of the parsimonious manner he might expect to be treated in, shewed the alliance it had to the usage he first received from him, and confirmed him in an opinion, that it was his natural disposition to uncharitableness, and not his having been imposed on, that made him so averse to any thing that had a view to compassion, very reasonably imagining that a letter from so honourable an hand in his favour, demanded a compliance of quite another sort; which prompted our hero to let him know, not in so abject a manner as perhaps he expected, That he was the same person, who some time before, had in the most suppliant manner applied to him on this very occasion, repeating to him the reasons why he had been formerly so solicitous; two of which particularly deserved his attention, first, That he was the son of a gentleman, and secondly, that he had been taken prisoner in the service of his country; adding very bluntly, that his carriage was not only unlike that of a christian, but a gentleman too, and most unwarrantably so as a consul; who, if his private inclinations were strangers to charity, yet his publick character required

red him to protect and relieve such of his majesty's subjects as were in distress; an instance of which he had seen before, but without any regard, in one perhaps, not inferior to himself in birth or education; and now saw him with no other signs of assisting him than doubtless a mere scanty compliance to the ambassador's letter.

This, I have heard him say, was a text he could have held forth on a great while, and would have expounded, perhaps more plainly, had not the consul prevented him, by telling him, he had no manner of remembrance of him; and that if his allegations were true, he had acted in a prudential way to prevent his being imposed on, repeating, with great resentment, his accusing him of want of humanity; which, though it was a style he had not all the seeming right in the world, at that time, to make use of to a man of his rank, yet it was most apostolically true; though the manner it was delivered in, occasioned the consul to tell him in great wrath, that he would allow him no more than a real and an half of plate a day, (value about ten pence halfpenny) to provide himself with lodging, diet, and every thing else he wanted; and that directions should be given for his being cloathed in such a manner as he thought proper, bidding him, when he had made choice of a place to lie at, and where he might be found, to send his clerk word; who sat by during the whole conversation, and should have had a practical inference or two, on his own retentive disposition, worth the whole doctrinal part of the sermon to his master, had he not eloped a little sooner than he imagined.

Our

Our hero, as he expected no favour from the consul, nor desired any more conferences with him, told him he would lodge at the English futler's on the Mole (meaning his old acquaintance Tom) where he was soon after cloathed, and furnished with such things only as were absolutely necessary; the consul keeping strictly to his resolutions against all manner of superfluities.

After which our hero never went again to him, it not being in his power to forget his bidding him be gone in the manner he at first did; but wrote him word, that he would acquaint his employers in what a poor and unwilling manner he had executed their commands; which arose from a spirit of resentment that nature had implanted in him against that detestable crime the want of charity; and he hopes that this account will be a land-mark to every sailor who may hereafter be bound up the Streights, not to steer too near such a rock, particularly in bad weather; and if he should be cast away, to depend on St. James, or St. Antonio, or any other red-lettered saint, rather than an unrelenting consul.

After our hero's discharge, he frequently visited his brother-soldiers, who had changed his name from the ragged Englishman, to El Seignior Inglese; and by the cutting off his whiskers, the addition of a bushy, black wig, and an hat not much broader than a quart mug, he looked like a French renegado; and with great difficulty lived within the consul's allowance, especially on account of some additional expenses that attended his dress and figure, thinking
it

it an indignity to himself to suffer any of his former comrades to be at any expence in his company ; which honourable sentiment they cultivated with great address and ingenuity.

When he had loitered about the town in this figure near six weeks, there came into the harbour, a vessel from Bristol, called the Little Robin, bound for the Streights, with a cargo of butter, cheese and corn, consigned to some of the merchants of Barcelona, with the master of which vessel, one Mr. Dowding, the consul agreed for our hero's passage, upon his consenting to go up the Streights with the captain ; to which he readily agreed, being so tired of the country, that he would have gone a foremast-man to the West-Indies, rather than have stayed a month longer in the king of Spain's dominions, with or without a commission.

The consul, to save expences, ordered that he should be sent on board directly ; and his allowance on shore being stopped, he took his birth there accordingly, and as soon as the captain had taken in his freight, he set sail for Portmahon.

But before he left Barcelona, the captain took in another passenger, who was a priest, and intended to make his passage thither, under the protection of an English vessel, for fear of being taken by the Algerines, if he attempted sailing in a Spanish one.

Our hero was so long among the Spaniards, that probably such an account as the circumstances he was in will allow him to make, will not be disagreeable, though they retard his voyage a little.

They

They are a people very particular in their tempers, and the meanest of them, have very good natural capacities ; but the talents they are endowed with are buried in pride and slothfulness, and through a contempt of offices of labour of any sort, many of them are half-starved ; and mechanicks, of all denominations, carry such badges of meanness about them, that they are refused admission into the company of those, who distinguish themselves by the character of independent gentlemen ; and yet a man of the most insignificant trade will not go abroad without his sword and cloak, and the poorest ape the gravity and gait of the richest, by turns most remarkably exalted, and submissively cringing.

It is a common acceptance that a Spaniard will not drink to excess, which in regard to his doing it in a publick manner, is true ; but tho' they will not drink above three halfpence worth of wine at any one house in a day, they will take the same quantity, at twenty different ones before twelve o'clock at night.

They are not quite so jealous as they are represented to be, which may probably arise from their trading more extensively than they formerly did ; upon which account great numbers of foreigners reside with them, from whom, at least, they ought to have learn'd, that a generous liberty has in effect more command than jealousy and restraint.

Their women, for the most part, are little and handsome, and put nothing on them to refine their shapes, having naturally very neat ones ; they are amorous, artful and successful in their intrigues, which they accomplish by signs,
for

for want of opportunities of conversing more freely; they commonly wear long veils, by which their faces are secured from the heat of the weather, and large farthingals, doubtless the original of that surprizing engine an hoop-petticoat; a machine far inferior to that of a farthingal, in regard to the pious emblems it is flounced with, such as a cross, and woollen or silken cords knotted, in imitation of those worn by their friars.

The men in their countenances and complexions are the reverse of the women, having ugly, fallow, meagre visages, jewish eyes, long noses and peaked chins, and little plucked beards, under the inspection of mustachio's of all sizes, forms and curlings; they dress after the same manner as they are reported to have done many centuries ago, in bands, small hats, pretty high in the crown, long black cloaks, an infinite number of buttons to their coats, immoderate long swords, with breeches open at the knees like trouzers, and in spectacles of three or four inches in diameter; and unvenerable, unregarded and naked is thy nose, O Spaniard! without them.

Their learning is metaphysically superficial, they are bigots to their religion, and inhuman persecutors of all such as differ with them on that account; and tho' charity be extensively extracted from them, it is more immediately done from a religious credulity; which is not mentioned here as a matter of complaint, but as a venial failing, a failing that two of our hero's acquaintance at Barcelona, are not to answer for. They have such a propensity to cheating, that it is a com-

comm
who
for t
emiss
art o

T
mur
diffe
do r
they
the
in i
they
you

but
and
the

ag
th
ki
ig
he
ob
ra

m
th
o
T
c
v
a
i

common proverb in other countries, that he who can outwit a Spaniard, may be an agent for the devil, from the instructions of whose emissaries they are likewise perfect masters of the art of swearing.

They are naturally gamesters, thieves and murderers, thro' jealousy, passion or pride; a distempered people by inheritance, and if they do not bring diseases into the world with them, they often extract them from their nurses breasts; the very beggars that ask charity from you do it in imperious terms, and if you do not bestow it, they often denounce the curse of God against you, for your sin of omission.

Some part of the country is excessively hot, but in general the climate and soil are very good, and yet great part of it is uncultivated through their incorrigible idleness.

Nature has provided them with all things agreeable and delightful to the appetite, but they are quite spoiled in the dressing, the whole kingdom being strangers to good eating, by their ignorance of the art of cookery, as far as our hero, from the indigence of his condition could observe; a fricassée of frogs, being the highest ragout he ever tasted among them.

Their money, wines and dialect differ in almost every province: their cities, and some of their towns, are very large, and a great many of their garrisons strong and in good repair. The town of Madrid, tho' the residence of the court, is remarkably bad, with more ditches, worse-built houses and narrower streets than in any other city or town in the kingdom, so that it is no uncommon thing there to see their coaches
and

and mules wading up to their axle-trees and bellies in filth, and yet there are several noble palaces in and about it.

This description may possibly be thought a partial one, on account of the usage our hero got in that country, but he has often assured me, that abstracted from partiality or any kind of resentment, it should be the last place he would chuse to live in, in regard to the conversation, diet, or the little amusements in life, to be met with in other countries, to which they are utter strangers; and except on his good Italian priest, some others of his fraternity, the Irish merchants, and his captain Savoigne, he has as few blessings left to bestow on it, as Isaac had on his son Esau; but as to the gentlemen before-mentioned, he does with the utmost pleasure return them his thanks and acknowledgments, as far as gratitude can discharge so large a demand.

But to proceed on his voyage, the master of the vessel, captain Dowding, was a morose churlish fellow, and no doubt acquainted by the consul with what sort of cargo he was to take under his convoy, and what provision was to be sent on board on that occasion; for even while he was at Barcelona, he seemed to chuse keeping at a distance, rather than creating any sort of acquaintance with our hero, and though he was sometimes his interpreter, he took care to exclude him from his company, when that office was at an end; and nothing in nature could better resemble the monster in the enchanted island, than the monster on board the Little Robin of Bristol, never

ver tractable when sober, but the most sawn-ing animal when he was drunk; and though our hero had no guard du vine, nor so much as a single dram on board, the captain never offered him one while he had stowage for it himself, which, it is said, he seldom wanted, and whenever he did, he was sailor good enough to know how to save a leaky vessel, by pumping it; he constantly fumigated his nose with tobacco, stuped his entrails with brandy, and had no more desire for conversation than a quaker, under the inspiration of the spirit, at a silent meeting.

The priest, who was the other passenger, and by his dress one of distinction in that order, had laid in a good sailing cargo, in every particular except wine, which, as he drank very little himself, he was at no trouble about, but, such as it was, fell intirely to our hero's share; for the priest was so sea-sick, and of such an infirm constitution otherwise, that he did not care to drink any thing but wine and water mixed, of the former of which ingredients, as our hero was his nurse-keeper, he took care, (doubtless in regard to his illness) that he should not take too much of, but of the latter our hero never once tasted, concluding very prudently that the priest ought not to want something wherewith to quench his thirst.

They had a very quick passage from Barcelona to Fort St. Philip, which lies just in the entrance of the harbour of Port-mahon, the finest perhaps in the world, where they met with a terrible hurricane, the wind blowing
O full

full in their teeth, and the storm continuing two nights and a day, they kept firing guns of distress, though no boat dared to venture off shore, to bring an hand from on board, which was the utmost they could hope for, the preservation of the ship being what they could not expect, so that he was in real danger of undergoing the fate he formerly pretended he had done; and it very naturally led him into suggestions, that such a ludicrous use as he had made of escaping a danger of that nature by providence, he might deservedly have been then rewarded for the want of its assistance. And, certainly, it is one of the most surprising things in life, to see how undauntedly, and even carelessly, men who are accustomed to the sea, neglect such a condition as they were in, eating, drinking, swearing and jesting on the brink, and at the circumstances of their death.

While they were in this condition, the priest often sent for our hero to his cabin, to inquire whether there was any hope of the vessel's being saved, who, as he saw no probability of it, told him, that it was his opinion that they should all be lost; at which account he did not seem to be shocked at all, but with great concern asked him, how it came about, that he and the rest of the sailors were so wretchedly insensible as not to be at their prayers; which, to tell the truth, not one on board concerned himself about except himself and the captain, in his way of worship, which was a medley of Heavens preserve us, Lord have mercy upon us, I think the devil is in the wind,

wind, Damme but Jonas and his whale's belly was but a mackarel gale to this; with an alphabetical denuntiation of other oaths and curses of too maritime a nature to explain here.

At every extraordinary gust of wind he would bellow like a bull; and when it was calm for a moment, he would gulp down a glass of brandy, enough to suffocate the most able land-man at that sort of liquor. In the day-time, during the whole storm, he stood on deck in a greasy woollen cap, with the collar of his shirt unbuttoned ready for swimming; he had a bible lying by him on the pinnacle, which he never opened, but as the ship heeled, would give a blow on it with his fist, sufficient to unbind it, and at the same time damn himself for having neglected to make a better use of it; in which pious devotion no one could be more fervent at that time, nor less so in any other sort afterwards.

The priest was very communicative of his exhortations, and shewed the most just remarks on the captain's behaviour in his cabin, where his tokens of a sincere and unfeigned repentance appeared in another light, by his cursing priests and friars of all sorts, and every other spiritual man of the order of Melchisedek, for occasioning whirlwinds, storms, and shipwrecks, to the utter destruction of his majesty's navy, on board of which they were either imported, exported, or transported; with confusion to himself if there was ever good luck in ebb or flood, soundings or no soundings,

ast' or abaft, star-board or lar-board, wherever a parson was a passenger.

As the storm increased, so did the noise and swearing upon deck, which occasioned the priest to apply to our hero for further intelligence, who confirmed what he had said before as to the danger they were in of being lost; but told him they trusted to providence, and that as the ship tailed so near the rocks, some of them might possibly swim to shore, if the ship should be wrecked: and if so or not so, they had nothing to lose but their carcases, which a great many of them did not think worth praying for.

As soon as the priest heard that some of them might possibly be saved, he desired our hero to come nearer to him, telling him, that he was sure he should die within a few hours, whether the vessel rode out the storm or not, and gave him very fatherly and good admonition; which at that time he was not at leisure to take all the notice of which it deserved, and put into his hands a small bundle of papers carefully sealed up, which he desired for the sake of the Virgin Mary, if our hero got safe on shore, might be delivered to Don Antonio Perez, the chief priest at Port-mahon; and then gave him a purse in which were thirty pistoles, advising him to make the best use of them he could, some of them in regard to himself, but particularly to remember the necessities of the poor, leaving the division of them to his own discretion, who, as he knew no one poorer than himself, had no great
trouble

trouble in chusing a proper object of his benefaction; he likewise desired him to deliver his gold watch, beads and crucifix, with a large trunk, to the priest before-mentioned; and, according to his prediction, died very near the time he had allotted for his departure, partly through fear, the storm having bore away the vessel's rudder, and the sea broke into the cabbin through the windows, and partly through the illness he lay under when he came on board at Barcelona.

Our hero took care of the papers, and all the rest of the things committed to his charge, but more especially the purse, which, in his opinion he was clearly intitled to, under a nuncupative will, though he was afterwards in imminent danger, by its not being reduced into writing, "according to the form of the statute in that case made and provided."

The next morning after his death, the masts being lost, and the rudder gone, they made shift to get into the harbour, and came safe to an anchor from a storm, which no one on board had any hopes of being delivered from, but verified the proverb of its being "an ill wind that blows no body good," for our hero was tolerably well paid for his attendance in it; but after what manner, he did not think it necessary to acquaint the captain, for fear he should attempt coming in as a joint legatee, though he furnished him with an account of the testator's nuncupative will in every other item: to all which he gave no other answer, than "Damn him if some of the sons of whores at Port-mahon did not pay for his

his passage, he would keep his carcase on board till the next storm, and then fling it overboard to appease it; for whatever subjection the priests might keep the devil under ashore, he was sure they raised him on board, and that the ship's hold was never free from the scent of brimstone since father Antony, father Jacobus, or father Beelzebub came on board her."

As soon as our hero got on shore, he went to the chief-priest, and gave him the packet sealed up, as he had received it, with an account of what other things were delivered to him, together with the gold-watch, beads and crucifix; and next day brought the priest to the captain, who upon giving him four pistoles, ordered that the deceased body, trunk, and what else belonged to him should be given to any one authorised to receive them for the chief-priest's use, though the money was clear gain to the captain, the poor man having never tasted any thing belonging to him or his crew, and very little of his own goods and chattels by the loss of appetite in him, which was of special service to the good one our hero had, and for want of more substantial diet, very often supplied him with sweet-meats, dried raisins, and now and then a pectoral, which he heartily wished could have been converted into a much better sort of liquor; together with a transmutation of his confectionary provision.

By the damage they received in the storm, they were obliged to lie at anchor in the harbour of Port Mahon, three weeks longer than other-

otherwise they would have done; and there our hero met with his old comrades in Pitts's regiment of horse, Mr. Margaret, and Mr. Otway, who were then lieutenants in that garrison, and behaved to him in the most friendly and genteel manner, lodging and entertaining him at their own houses during the ship's stay; our hero gave them a general detail of what had happened to him from the time he was broke out of the regiment, and by their means was introduced to governor Hardgrave, and most of the officers of the garrison, and at length sent away, by their assistance, as well provided with ship-stores as his honour the captain.

The priest to whom he delivered the papers made it his business afterwards to be frequently in his company, inquiring where the ship was bound to; and in a most particular manner, whether the other priest was not possessed of any money at the time of his death.

Our hero told him, that they were bound to Genoa, Leghorn and Naples, and that it was not probable that the deceased priest should have money, without mentioning how he would have it disposed of, as he had done the rest of his effects, and probably under the same confidence, which had been faithfully discharged by him in regard to what he had delivered over to his use.

The priest thanked him very kindly for the observance he had shewn to his friend's last requests in relation to himself, and with a suspicious complaisance, begged pardon for his making any further inquiries about the deceased's effects, which he was chiefly induced to do

upon his being informed, that he was the only person on board who could converse with him at any rate; which in fact was true, but carried no manner of conviction in it to persuade our hero to a necessity of mentioning the nuncupative will, for fear the validity of it should be disputed, in a part of the world, where he was neither acquainted with the vicar-general, his surrogate, register, or any judicial procurator.

As soon as the ship was refitted and ready to sail, he took his leave of the most kind and obliging set of officers that were ever met with, though it was almost impossible to add to the esteem he always had for the gentlemen of that profession; and indeed the bent of his genius was ever to the army, though so unfortunate were his campaigns, that neither his courage or conduct could advance him to higher preferment than a corporal; and yet such was the civility of those gentlemen, as to send him home in a dress, by which he might have been qualified to have made no small figure at any of the most celebrated routs, drums, ridottos, or assemblies in Dublin or elsewhere.

They had a very good passage from Port Mahon to Genoa, where the captain was to take in bale-goods, taffita's and velvets; our hero had not been on shore but twice before he was taken prisoner, without the least suspicion upon what account, and carried before the Savi Grande, who are judges of all sea-faring complaints; and as soon as he was brought into their hall, they informed him by an interpreter, that the reason of his being apprehended was, for having detained a considerable sum of money
belong-

belonging to a priest who died in his passage from Barcelona to Port Mahon, on board the vessel in which he came into their harbour, and whose brother was a native of Genoa; and pointing to him, let our hero know he was then present, and demanded restitution of the money; to which libel, he put in a peremptory and exceptive matter, in *ipsis terminis*, as at Port Mahon.

This accusation arose from the other priest, whose meaning for inquiring so often where the vessel was bound to, he did not consider till then. The captain was sent for who confirmed what our hero had said in his defence, that he never heard that the priest had any money, or left any, or that any sum whatsoever had been detained from him, by our hero, or any person belonging to his ship; all which testimony was given for want of intelligence in the captain, who would have informed against the whole race of mankind for a third part of the legacy: and as he had been paid by the consul for the prisoner's passage, he let him and his judges know, "that he would give himself no further trouble about their suspicions or accusations, but that they might imprison him or not as they thought convenient; and that all he knew of the matter, was, that the Little Robin would go so much the lighter home, if that part of her cargo (meaning our hero) was hoisted over-board." And it is believed, in order to save his provisions, he would have been of the same opinion as to his being hanged.

However, when our hero found himself quite deserted, he behaved as courageously as he could,

and told them very smartly, that the captain (brute as he was) was bringing him home by a special order from the English ambassador at Madrid, and that if they hindered him of his passage by imprisonment or otherwise, that it would be at their peril, and that as a subject of England, he claimed a right to that ambassador's protection : upon which his judges nodded very gravely ; and after a whisper'd debate, told the prisoner, that at present he should not be ordered to gaol, but that directions would be given, which they expected the captain should implicitly obey, that he should not go out of the gates of the city, at least not on board his or any other vessel, till the return of the packet boat from Barcelona ; and as the captain had let them know his resolution of putting into their harbour again, before he sailed homewards, our hero was prevented from going with him any further up the Streights.

Before the ship sailed he got his chest so well furnished by the generosity of the officers a-shore, not depending on the master's word as to his calling at Genoa again, from whence he sailed in about ten days without him ; and though he knew it was impossible that he could be attacked to any purpose, yet he was so unacquainted with the Genoese laws, and so well acquainted with the uncertainty of law in general, that he was under some apprehensions of the consequences of even a charge against him, let it be never so indifferently grounded : but as the English and Irish who resided there were informed that he was detained on a mere surmise, he was treated by them in a very friendly manner, especially
on

on his complaining of the ungenerous use the Port Mahon priest had made of his fidelity to him; whose scrutiny on this occasion, must undoubtedly have risen from some memorandums in the papers he had given him; the deceased priest not having spoke a word, nor wrote a line, after he had bequeathed the money in the manner he did, nor was any person but himself present at the time it was delivered.

As our hero had nothing to do within the town, nor any opportunity of going out of it, it came naturally in his way to make some observations on the place and its inhabitants; who are a people of very quick apprehension, and of a sedate carriage, though not of the fullen, gloomy disposition of a Spaniard, and yet some of them the greatest buffoons and scaramouches, especially on festivals and holidays.

Their behaviour in general is as civil as can be met with, if not too much on the punctilio: the men dress after a better manner than the Spaniards, pretty much in the French fashion, except some of the most antient families, who still retain the Spanish customs of whiskers, beads, and long cloaks, and make a very odd figure at their times of eating; having then usually on them grey coats, and little caps; and though they are sober enough in regard to their own drinking, they leave it in the power of every other person to do as he pleases, by having different wines put on a stand with a large glass in the middle, into which every one pours as much, and as often as he pleases; they have likewise a very disagreeable custom of scraping cheese upon many things they eat.

As to the women, the charms of their beauty are very easily to be withstood, and to add an unnatural lustre to it, they all paint, and frequently go bare-headed at home; they wash their hair with some composition, which they dry in the sun, and by that means turn it into a yellowish colour: they make fornication with its appendix a mere traffick, and his holiness licenses the trade, by permitting common stewes, which pay him an annual duty towards maintaining his gallies, against the more continent Turks and Infidels. And this must certainly be a considerable article in trade, in which the merchants are employed both day and night.

The city is very populous, and in it a great many magnificent palaces and churches, and what is more particular, their gardens are on the tops of their houses, most of which are exceedingly good; it is in circumference about six miles, but some of the old streets are so very narrow and dark, that a coach cannot pass through them.

Our hero lived very well here, and appeared as chearful as possibly he could, though he was extremely anxious about the return of the packet from Barcelona, and very inquisitive from all his acquaintance about it, from whom he could get no other intelligence, than that it was one of the most uncertain that came into that harbour.

From the beginning of his confinement within the town, he was advised, upon no account whatsoever, to attempt going out of the gates; which advice he strictly complied with, being afterwards assured on undeniable testimony, that

if

if he had done otherwise they would have assassinated him, not unknown to the priest's brother, in whom, as he was so deeply read in physiognomy, he could plainly observe a latent malicious design against his life; and as thoroughly satisfied that if he had not gone with all the privacy imaginable on board the Little Robin, he never should have sailed home in any other ship: for the very day the captain was under his fore-sail for putting to sea, there was a mob attending him wherever he went.

In about three weeks the packet boat arrived from Barcelona, after which he frequently met with some of the magistrates, before whom he was brought when he first came to Genoa; but observing that there was no order for his being closer confined, he apprehended what in fact was true, that there was nothing further to be alleged against him; and upon the captain's return to Leghorn, he was restored to his full liberty: after which, the ship was seldom free from some insult or other at low-water, especially when the captain came on board for the last time; when our hero did not think proper to make his appearance on deck, nor so much as join in a cheer, till he had got safe out of the channel, and then it is indeed no difficult matter to guess at what sort of a salvo he bestowed.

However before he went off, as private as his embarkation was, as he had spent some part of his legacy, and been detained there without any proof whatsoever against him, he thought he was intitled to the re-payment of some part of his losses by way of costs; and accordingly applied to the Savi Grande, letting him know to
what

what a great expence he had been put, on a very malicious insinuation, not forgetting to interperse the ambassador's name in his memorial; which he drew in terms not beneath an insulted plenipotentiary, though he got no redress, nor any other answer to his excellency's demands, than that he had a very good escape, and could easily afford the expences complained of, to which they were sorry, that they could not conveniently add such damages as he richly deserved.

As soon as they were under sail, and the captain had an opportunity of conversing with him alone, he began, reflecting perhaps upon what little notice he had taken of him during this affair, in a very moving strain, letting him know under what extraordinary concern he had been for him: "S'blood, man, I was never put to my trumps so much since I was as big as a tar-barrel; damn it, you would have got a shot between wind and water if it had not been for me, that would have sunk you at once; the sons of whores made me launch out ten pieces before I could bring them to at any rate: there was not a tack at the helm but I took, to bear right-a-head on the doge. 'Sdeath, the old pirate carried a bloody stiff sail, and had as sharp a look-out as if he was to the leeward of an Algerine: heark-ye, boy, they took no more notice of your consul, nor your jaw-work about the ambassador, than I would do if I was keel-hawling the pope, do you see me; and if so be you sheered off with a yellow-boy or two of the priest's, much good may do you; why, man, I have not a hand on board but would have lent him

him a lift at a dead set. 'Sblood, I had rather sail off at ebb tide with the wind in our teeth, with a dollar of his money, do you see me, than lie by half a glass, for all his whim-whams, prayers, Lord have mercy upon us, and the rest of his church-rigging. Come, give us your fist; here is confusion, do you see me, to the whole nation, prosperity to the Little Robin of Bristol, and a safe passage, my boy."

This was the first time our hero had heard so much of his rhetorick, and as the bottle was in his hand, he had reason to suppose he was to pledge him; but though he was quite out of breath, he tipped off half a pint of brandy at once, and left him, swearing, he should have had a taste, but that the mate or some devil or other had drank off two thirds of his bottle.

This sort of discourse and treatment, was no great novelty to him, having experienced his great humanity in many particulars before; and he was so far from believing the mystery of his conversation, that as soon as he came upon deck again, our hero told him, that all he had said about Genoa was a packet of forgery and untruths; and that as soon as he got home he would make a proper use of his brutish behaviour; and from thence-forward broke off all manner of conversation with him, and having replenished his chest before he went on board, he knew he should not stand in need of his assistance, and was determined not to give him any; so that though they generally messed together, and were in that particular, allies, yet they were neutrals in regard to their drink.

They

They had a good passage to Cadiz, a furly captain, and a downright hearty mate, who was our hero's comrade in drinking, smoaking and singing, three excellent qualifications on a long voyage, in the second of which they were constantly imployed, and the last depended on the first. They met with some English vessels that informed them that several Algerine ships were cruizing in the channel, and that one of them had been brought to by one of their corsairs of forty guns, but on the captain's producing his pass, she was discharged without further molestation. This put their captain in mind of searching for his, which was by some means or other mislaid, which brought him into such a terrible disorder, that he was seldom sober one hour in eight and forty; the compleatest way he knew to assuage the consternation he was under of being made a prisoner, which I have heard our hero say, he would almost consented to have been for some few months, provided his honour captain Dowding was to have gone through a regular bastinado, during his continuance there.

This same fright, notwithstanding the nostrum he made use of to abate it, continued so very severe, that he was ready to fall into an apoplexy at the discovery of a sail of any kind whatsoever; and being a little near-sighted, whenever he put the telescope to his eye upon that occasion, he would swear he saw a whole fleet of Algerines bearing down on him, crying out, "S'blood, Matthews, (which was his mate's name) don't you see the bloody flag at their main-top-mast-head? don't you see a black ensign and pennant? why, Matthews, you may
see

see a death's head in every quarter of them ; all this comes athwart us, do you see me, upon account of the cursed priest or friar who gave up the ghost aboard us at Port-mahon ; there is not a parson in the varfal world, but the devil owes a spite to, dead or alive : while we had his carcase below decks, which, do you see me, stunk like a barrel of rotten herrings, we were always in a storm, and when he was making his last tack for t'other world, there was not a Lapland witch that had a feather in her wings, but was hovering over the Little Robin ; and had he not sheered off as he did, the other pater-noster would have overset her, turned her, do you see me keel upwards ; a pretty breakfast we should have been, damme, for a shoal of grampasses ; and now his carcase is rotting on shore, these Mahometan dogs have a mind to board us, in order to give a look-out for his soul : Matthews, why I tell you, Matthews, 'tis not that I value any religion of a groat, and could learn, mayhap, the Mahometan creed as soon as another ; but to lose the Little Robin of Bristol, to have a son of a whore of a mussulman the captain of the Little Robin, why a man would turn Jew, Turk, Mahometan, or any thing but a priest, first ; damn him that says no. What say you, Matthews ? out with it."

On this and all other occasions he was as a man that regardeth himself only, and gave himself no manner of trouble at all about the crew, or the hardships they in particular must have undergone by the forfeiture of the ship,

fo

so that our hero and the mate upon sight of any vessel whatsoever, while they were in that latitude, would affirm it was an Algerine corsair; by which they got now and then a parting dram out of his guard du vin, on account, doubtless, of his believing, that if any thing should be left in it, it must soon come into other hands; and it is said, that he was so good a christian, as not willingly to bestow his liquor on a Turk.

The carpenter of the ship had been a prisoner at Algiers for seven years, and as these transactions happened on board while he was there, it lay in his way to give some account of it, probably a more succinct and natural one than many that have made their appearance before; which I have recited, believing that the truth of it may excuse the digression from the history.

He affirmed, that though it was a notion generally received, that the slavery that followed being taken prisoner by the Algerines, was in it self of the cruellest kind, yet he found it quite different, for that such slaves as had been brought up to any manner of business, and behaved themselves tolerably well, were treated with humanity; and that when a corsair took a prize, the persons belonging to it, as soon as they were landed, were brought to the dey's house, to which they were followed by their respective consuls, who resided there; and if they were passengers of such nations as were at peace with the Algerines, the dey ordered them to be discharged immediately;

diately; but if they were of nations at war with them, and served on board in any respect, they were deemed slaves, and the dey had his choice of every eight of them; and, besides that privilege, absolutely claimed all others of rank or distinction.

Such as were deemed common slaves were drove to the public market, where the cryer proclaimed their trade, and the price set on them; such as were of no trade, were immediately put to laborious employments, in which when they were not wanted, as particularly on every Friday, they were allowed to work for themselves, or for others, who were freemen and inhabitants, and not of their belief: to every one of these kind of slaves were given three loaves of bread a day, about the size of our penny loaves, and by their continual industry, many of them saved money there; and that the government allowed them a property in what they got; and further, that the condition of such as are slaves to private persons, depended intirely on their own behaviour. This was in regard to the men.

But as to the women, unless their purchasers expect a large ransom, they are sold again to every use their buyers think convenient: and yet treated with a great deal more humanity than many of the unfortunate ladies in Drury-lane.

From Genoa they sailed directly to Cadiz, and nothing more happened extraordinary in the passage but a constant round of brutality from their captain, who was always drunk in
bad

bad weather, and asleep when it was fair, and as soon as they came to an anchor, and opportunity served, our hero trusted himself again on the unhallowed ground of Spain; and ventured to make his appearance in Cadiz, though he was not free from the apprehensions of meeting with some of the regiments to which he had formerly belonged, particularly that of Mahony's dragoons, which he had no opportunity of taking his leave of at Balbastro. And according to his suggestions, saw some of the officers belonging to it there, particularly lieutenant colonel Eustace, who took no manner of notice of him; and no wonder that he escaped his knowledge, considering the different figure he then made from what he did when he deserted: his dress and appearance being converted from a lank head of hair, a pair of half-curl'd whiskers, and a shabby regimental coat, into a smart toupee wig, not an hair to be seen on his lips, an extraordinary good scarlet coat, a silk waistcoat, and a laced hat, cocked so fiercely, that had even a Spaniard been the owner of it, it must have animated his natural caution; to which were added a cane, and some other military decorations, all of which were the effects of the generosity of the officers at Port-mahon.

While they lay in that harbour, our hero had nothing to imploy himself in but viewing the town, and observing some little incidents that did not come in his way in any other part of Spain; and particularly, being present at a play acted by the natives, far beyond

yond his judgment whether it was a comedy or a tragedy; but, if he may be allowed so inconsistent a denomination, it was both and neither; and in regard to their players and their dress, mean and ridiculous to the last degree; so different from the stage in Smock-alley, that instead of the women personating the men, if they could even arrive at the perfection of Mrs. Woffington in the celebrated character of Sir Harry Wildair, it would be counted an assurance beyond absolution for any woman to attempt it, or indeed to appear on the stage at all; for want of whom, their male substitutes look like a set of Moorish hermaphrodites, exorcising the devil on a fast day.

They were equipped in much the same sort of dresses as they usually wore at other times, except the buffoon, who made an appearance exactly resembling a merry-andrew at Bartholomew fair. Their stage is made with wooden planks laid on empty wine-pipes, without scenes, and very few decorations; the tragedy, comedy, farce, or pastoral, or whatever they are pleased to call it, is acted by day-light, and the spectators seated on benches, like those at a puppet-show.

The hero of the what-do-you-call-it is generally one of their saints, whom, when the actor represents as having done some miracle, the whole audience fall on their knees, crossing themselves, and repeating their Pater-nosters as devoutly as they do at the celebration of mass; and though they are in high glee, and in the midst of a laugh at what the buffoon

buffoon in the play has most unwittingly said, if they hear the vesper-bell ring, which it constantly does at the close of every evening, they change their laugh into devotion, and unanimously repeat their prayers on that occasion.

Between the acts of the play, which contains no other, if any plot or meaning at all, than the overthrow of some poor devil by a saint, the continency and strength of a nun against a monstrous large giant, or the dissecting, burning, boiling or roasting some martyr, who comes to life again. The buffoon makes his appearance in the dress before-mentioned, except as to his whiskers, whose extempore speech let it be never so stupid, is attended with an universal shout, and a pair of spectacles, with glasses of the size of our penny loaves properly clapped on his nose on a sudden, have occasioned a longer and louder clap than ever Mr. Sheridan got by acting the part of Hamlet or Richard the Third; though I know no one that can excel him in that or any other character he appears in: indeed to the honour of their audience they are altogether unacquainted with the use of the catcall, and as bad as their entertainment is, they give their attendance with a view of applauding rather than criticising; and if you hear a groan, it is what arises from a religious ecstasy, without any design of disturbing the audience.

They divide the performance into three acts, with interludes of the most discording musick
of

of guittars, harps, castinets, fises, drums, pipes and tabors, with a set of dancers with little bells round their ancles, who, in some of their friskings, stooped so low that they almost touched the ground with their noses, while they were on their feet; a piece of activity to be left to the determination of Mahomet Caracca and Maddox, in regard to their performance on the wire.

Our hero could easily distinguish a freer conversation between the gentlemen and ladies at Cadiz than in any other part of the kingdom, introduced without doubt by the great numbers of foreigners who reside there, who very often leave a specimen of the gaiety of their behaviour to their children, begotten there at the peril of their lives; and I have heard him say, that by his experience in his favourite science, physiognomy, he could see to demonstration, an Englishman's nose, a Dutchman's lips, a Frenchman's forehead, and sometimes a pair of Jewish eyes, in the dronish face of a Spanish alcadee-mayor.

The ship lay at anchor at Cadiz about a fortnight, and from thence sailed to Gibraltar, about fourteen leagues from it, and there the captain was to take in the complement of his loading, being Morocco leather, carpets and mats, from Ceuta, a Moorish garrison not many leagues from it.

Our hero brought a packet of letters thither from Port-mahon, from some of the officers of that garrison to those at Gibraltar, where he met with several of the gentlemen, formerly of Chud-

Chudleigh's, when he was a soldier at Vigo in that regiment. They informed him, that as soon as he was missed at the camp, that he was returned in the roll among the number of the dead. In the letters he brought with him he was mentioned in a most obliging and friendly manner, very natural to the gentlemen of that profession, and was accordingly received with a great deal of civility from the gentlemen of the several regiments they corresponded with.

That garrison, as our hero informed me, lies in the hottest part of Spain, and so strong, that it is almost impossible it should be taken by any enemy unless by sea; and to him the most disagreeable of all others he had been in, not only in regard to the excessive heat, but the bugs and muskettoes, against which there is hardly any defence: and tho' the officers and soldiers, and their wives are allowed the same sort and quantity of provision as on board a man of war, exclusive of their pay, yet it is far more agreeable to live at Portmahon without that allowance, as it is a very healthful island, and produces a good deal of corn and wine; and what adds very much to the agreeableness of it is, that it lies in a much cooler climate than that of Gibraltar, and every officer has a house and garden to himself rent-free.

As they were then in one of his majesty's garrisons, the captain began his former cant again, telling our hero "how glad he was that he brought him safe so far, and that the consul was an ill-natured son of a whore for bearing such

such a tort hand over his stores, and that our hero was a chalk-faced milk-sop for not belaying him now and then for a dram, or a piggin of rumbo, which that dog Matthews had orders to hand over to him in case it was hard weather : why 'sdeath, man, it must be damn'd low water when a man cannot get enough to mix with a little brandy and sugar : why, my lad, if that land-lubber the consul had but told me as how you was not in sailing order, you should have had as much belly-rigging, do you see me, as the Little Robin could have carried under her main-sail : damn me, that Matthews might have handed the word about, and half a dozen gallons of right stingo would have chopped full in your teeth before the anchor had been peek high : what, no liquor ; why, do you see me, a witch in an egg-shell has a bottle of nantz with her, tho' she is sailing to the devil." Notwithstanding all this harangue, his stores were so well secured, that neither our hero nor the mate could get a drop of them, unless they now and then turned smugglers, and run a gallon or two of his liquor when he was so drunk as not to be able to give a good look-out.

However, our hero did not think it necessary to confront him at that time, not knowing but he might have occasion to make use of his extraordinary condescension in the freightage of some small purchase or other as an adventurer, in order to carry home a little more than he brought out with him, and be honoured with the name of a merchant, tho' he wanted the stock ; and accordingly Matthews and he very

P

judi-

judiciously agreed in a trite but very significant proverb, that "it is better that a dog should fawn on you than bite you;" tho' the coalition of parties had like to have brought the mate and our hero into a terrible scrape.

There was a merchant there who was a jew, a man in very good circumstances, and among other goods and commodities sold wine; and while they were at anchor there the captain resorted to his house. This jew had inveigled away the wife or pretended wife of one Thomas, who was then a serjeant in that garrison; and Thomas doubtless to shew his christian resignation, had afterwards for a consideration assigned, transferred and made over all his right, title, and interest in and to his said wife for ever unto the said jew, who and Mrs. Thomas cohabited together, without any temporal or spiritual let, hindrance, or molestation whatsoever.

She was a likely woman, and dressed pretty well, and the mate and our hero upon the late coalition, used frequently to drink with the captain at the jew's house, by which means they became acquainted with the purchase made from serjeant Thomas.

The industrious pains-taking woman, had scraped together a considerable sum of money, and it is thought being tired of a jew, the most ill-favoured one belonging to the whole synagogue, had struck up a private bargain of reconveying herself to the captain, who tho' he had very few marks of christianity about him, was not quite so ugly as the jew; and in consequence of the agreement, had consented to transport

transport herself and effects to England; into the secret of which, the carpenter and Matthews were of necessity let: but as cunning as the captain thought himself to be, the Hebrew owner of the prize suspected him, and looked like an out-lawed usurer at some little familiarities that passed between the captain and Mrs. Thomas, who was not half so prudent as she was amorous; and upon that account his circumcised worship, would very often put on such an Old-Testament look, as very apparently shewed that he would not allow her to have any sort of intercourse with such as were not of his own tribe, which our hero seemed thoroughly convinced was that of Isachar, for he had the longest pair of ears that eyes ever beheld, and a gloominess of countenance as if he had been a retailer in murder all the days of his life; and as our hero understood Spanish, the jew very often chose to converse with him in that language, as well for the sake of privacy, as to uncase his mind to him concerning the captain's frequent visits at his house, especially in synagogue time; telling him, "why Lord sir, you seem to be a sensible man, and must have observed some familiarities here; I need not say between whom; but pray is there any reason because I stick to the law of Moses, and the Old Testament, that I must be made an horned beast of by any believer in the New One: an adulterer by our law was to be stoned to death, and must a Nazarene captain of a vessel attempt making a concubine of an hand-maid of mine unpunished; by Aaron's beard he shall be cir-

cumcised against his will; I will have him arraigned for the breach of all the ten commandments, and the curse of every prophet, priest and levite from the days of Melchizedeck to this hour, shall be proclaimed against him at our next pentecost, if he does not forbear. Mr. I do not know your name, sir; put the case to yourself; have not all mankind a property in their own utensils, and has not a jew the same as well as a christian; Lord sir, every married man has his Meum and Tuum, and so have I, sir, with the premises thereunto belonging, as serjeant Jackson mentions in the lease he drew for me of these little concerns you are in now; but again sir, I have nothing to spare for adulterers, fornicators or thieves." The jew would doubtless have gone on from Dan to Barsheba in the explanation of his jealousy, but the captain came into the room on a sudden, which for that time put an end to his complaints, which as our hero had no manner of regard to a jew of any kind, he took very little notice of, nor indeed ever heard more of them afterwards.

The plot of taking Mrs. Thomas away, was not to be executed till within half an hour of the ship's sailing, and while the jew was at his lavings and oblations on a Saturday morning, Mrs. Thomas came on board with the remaining part of her dower, which had not been sent on board before, slipping out of the garrison gates with the mate and carpenter as soon as the fort-major had opened them.

How-

However, Mr. Emanuel was so little a time at his devotion, and missed his purchase so soon, that before the vessel could get clear of the bay, the king's boat, his jewshop, with a serjeant and file of musqueteers, came along-side of her, with an order from the governor that she should come to her anchor again; and that the serjeant should arrest the captain, his mate and carpenter; and that they and their prize should be brought back prisoners in the king's boat, doubtless under a judaical examination of blasphemy, treason, murder, and a rape.

When the king's boat came up, the ship was steering under her forefail out of the harbour, and the captain, tho' the serjeant acquainted him with his orders, refused to bring to or lie by, not very well knowing what might be the consequence of his obeying the serjeant's word of command; upon which the jew very heroically took hold of the rope on the ship's side, being to the last degree enraged at the sight of his Helen's being carried off in the manner she was, cursing and anathematizing every Trojan on board the Little Robin; and as he was endeavouring to board her, fell into the sea, and having struck his head against her keel was drowned, notwithstanding all the endeavours from the boat to save him.

This was really a very melancholy affair, and had it not been taken as a judgment on Emanuel for inveigling the woman from her husband, and living with her afterwards in such unchristian-like incontinency, it would have given the spectators as much concern

as was necessary for the loss of a jew at any rate.

However, it alarmed the captain so that he hoisted all his sails, and sheered off to sea as fast as he could, leaving the serjeant and his boat out of sight, towing the circumcised porpoise they had caught, to the garrison.

The captain's prize kept snug in the cabin most part of the time, and appeared very pacifick till she saw her old comrade clinging to the rope, upon which she bawled out, "Help, help, for the love of God, help, dear gentlemen-sailors cut the rope; there is the rogue that occasioned the loss of my precious reputation. Oh! gentlemen, gentlemen, I was the virtuous, honest wife of serjeant Thomas, till that cursed jew you see boarding us, made me in a bad hour forsake him: oh! if it had been a christian it would not have vexed me. Cut the rope, cut the rope; oh! Mr. Matthews, take the hand-spike and give him one knock first, or as sure as a gun he will get safe to shore." And as soon as he fell into the sea, she clapped her hands, and cried out, "The devil give you a safe landing-place." And when they got clear from the boat, she gave the crew two bottles of brandy for a cheer to his safe passage into the other world. For which treatment to a wretch in his condition, may arise a very natural reflection, on what sort of usage persons may expect from all such female acquaintances.

They were about a month in their passage from Gibraltar to Bristol, during which nothing

thing material happened, the captain's and Mrs. Thomas's commerce being for the most part uninterrupted; which probably nothing could have disturbed unless the jew's ghost could have got on board, which the captain was not quite free from apprehending, by asking in intervals of sobriety, "If the witch of Endor and her whole tribe of ghosts were not jews, and kept a much closer correspondence than usual with the carpenter, upon his being a free-mason, and a most learned historian in regard to witches and spirits; particularly of a Welshman who was drowned, and as how his soul got into the hour-glass at Greenland, and burst out in a clap of thunder at Plymouth;" but let the case be how it would, it was remarked, that after Emanuel's being drowned, the captain was never known to be alone in the cabin after sunset; and if the candle at the binnacle was blown out, he would call out to the man at the steerage to know if the flame was not quite blue at the time it went out; tho' these little surmises generally ended in "Damn him he is turned into a shark by this time."

At last our hero landed safe at Bristol, and once more, to his inexpressible joy, set his feet on English ground, after above eight years absence, accompanied with all kinds of want and misery; and what is surprising beyond measure, he bore them all with little or no dejection, and in reality was more sensibly attacked by the consul's inhumanity than by all of them together; nor was he sick to any degree the whole time, except

at Rodrigo, and had an aguish disorder at O-lite: and all along wanted more kitchen physick than phlebotomy, and more wine than snow water. And he does with the humblest thanks acknowledge, that the hand of providence appeared more distinguishably in his favour, than perhaps to any one living whose travels where of no greater extent; one that had been bred up tenderly and in affluence, one that had experienced great part of the gaieties of life, at once reduced to the lowest ebb of fortune; one who was naturally of a chearful disposition, and perhaps too fond of company, left to be roughly used, in want of every necessary of life, among soldiers and beggars, an alien, a prisoner, and shut up alone to the miserable contemplations in a prison, a living prey to vermin of all sorts, and the very sport of adversity and contempt, and had he been master of the patience of Job, had opportunities enough of exercising it.

After our hero had been some few days ashore, the captain took an opportunity of asking him what he designed to do, whether he proposed going to London, and if so, after what manner, and particularly, whether he did not expect a letter of credit for money to defray the expences he must of necessity be at till he could get thither.

In answer to which he told him, that after his arrival at Barcelona, he had no opportunity of writing to his father, and hoped the consul had taken some care about that with him; though he had no reasonable expectations

tions of a favour of that nature, either from one or the other; but was willing to know what he had to trust to, and let the consequence of his answer be what it would, he was not at all alarmed at travelling an hundred miles, who had gone so many, and such long journeys, without two pence in his pocket at his setting out.

The captain acknowledged that he had been paid for his passage, but received no other orders than to put him on shore and give him a guinea; which he accordingly did, and tho' he was so punctual in his accounts, yet he hesitated some time about an allowance that ought, in his opinion, to be made out of the guinea to the cabin-boy; a perquisite time immemorial to those dirty attendants, and which he insisted on a long time, though he did not know that he had a shilling, exclusive of the guinea, to bear his expences, and what he owed at Bristol included. He let him know, that if he was obliged to stay there till he could hear from his friends, that he would recommend him and his fellow-passenger Mrs. Thomas, (and he might safely have added, his bed-fellow) to an acquaintance of his, where they might diet and lodge at a reasonable price; and that he had already consulted Mrs. Thomas about it, who did not seem averse to the proposal.

And indeed so far our hero approved of his advice, by no means thinking it unnecessary to have a female banker on the road, in case his money should grow short, which by

one means or other was a little on the diminution; and really to do justice to the generous disposition of his fellow-traveller, she gave him an opportunity of getting rid of any uneasiness, she imagined he might be under about his journey, telling him, " That possibly he might be in want of a little money, being so long, and at so many places in his passage home, and for some other reasons which the captain had mentioned to her; but that there was nothing in which she could reasonably assist him, but she would willingly do it, on account of the confidence she put in him, in regard as well to the little substance she was mistress of as to her person, being now a poor, lone woman; and desired him to keep the death of the unfortunate man, as she was pleased to call him, who fell over-board, a secret; and though sure enough he had taken her from her husband, and was a jew into the bargain, yet she hoped notwithstanding her being a little too sharp on him when he was drowning, that his religion would not keep him from heaven, nor his crime in regard to her send him to a worse place; for if so what would become of half the stock-jobbers in London of that sect: and that as to serjeant Thomas, he was a poor weak easy man, sure enough, and had nothing about him to recommend him but his halbert, or else he would not have been so poor spirited a cur as to have parted with her under his hand and seal even to a christian, much less to one, the Lord forgive him, who was a jew, and such a sort of one, as
in

in her conscience she could see no harm in getting a penny by. But thanks to her stars she had this comfort yet, that she hoped Mr. Thomas got full value for her, at least for the time she was deluded to stay from him, and make her truly thankful she was now free from the whole world, and to her great comfort at her own disposal; and fellow-traveller, I design to go by the name of Gorman, you remember as how we could not save him, and sure enough they say he was a gentleman born, and God knows how few serjeants deserve that title; you need not tell how poor Mr. Gorman came to die, but let that be as it will, I do assure you fellow-traveller, I had wherewithal to have buried him, if he had dyed in his bed as the saying is, but Lord be merciful to us, he sunk at once; but however he is gone, and I am obliged to you and all such as have or will be a friend to a poor helpless woman, and let me tell you and tell you again, that no one shall be a loser by it."

She likewise expatiated largely on the captain's tenderness to her, his great abilities and capacity, but concluded the whole account of him, by saying he had made her pay a most exorbitant price for her passage, though she had been as civil to him as if he had been her brother, nay civiler.

As to the declarations she had made relating to our hero, they were not at all disagreeable, for the reasons mentioned before, and he, as every knight-errand in his situation ought to have done, promised, maugre all attempts on

either her person or effects, to escort her safe to London.

The widow (as by this time she had brought herself to believe she was) was soon equipped by a very skilful hand in such a dress as proclaimed, to all appearance, the reality of her condition; and put on such a mortified countenance, as it has been said, hardly ever appeared before, on the occasional death of a jew.

Our hero and his fellow-traveller stayed about a week at the Talbot inn at Bristol, where they had frequent visits from the captain, under the greatest circumspection in the world, it being at the lower end of the street where he lived, whose house was inhabited and governed by his wife, the most notable proficient at haranguing in Bristol, where they left him to be exercised as he deserved, under the direction of a female Tartar; whose sea-monster was a medley between a brute and a tarpaulin, as rough as a bear, and as hungry as an ill-thriven shark, an arrant amphibious animal, that inherited the vices belonging both to the sea and land.

From Bristol they travelled together in the stage-coach, accompanied by a quaker and his wife, a dancing-master, a mantua-maker, and a subaltern officer of a man of war, who was a pensioner of Greenwich hospital, and had been at Bristol to take possession of a legacy left him by his uncle, who had been a lieutenant of the Speedwell man of war; and our hero was once more dignified by the stile and
title

title of a captain, conformable to the dress he was then in; having on him a gold-laced hat of a very diminutive size, a smart bob-wig, a silk handkerchief, and a pair of scarlet breeches, and by the olive complexion he got from the heat of the country, was not unlike to the master of an East-India man, and the widow one of the natives of that country, who as she was of a merry disposition, would now and then give them a song in the coach, especially after dinner, which made her appear more alert than was quite reconcileable to the quaker's wife; who would now and then very judiciously tell her, "that indeed a chearful heart was a blessing desireable enough in this miserable life, but that godly sorrow, on the death of a friend or acquaintance, but more especially that of an husband, was not only decent, but the duty of a christian woman, and was, as she had been told, practised in all nations, kingdoms and countries in the universal world, and what she might have seen in the deportment of the true believers of her sect, at the funeral interment of their friends, and by their carriage afterwards; and albeit they were not arrayed in vestments of black, yet they were of a contrite heart, and that their sackcloth and ashes were sprinklings and cloathings for the inward man, instead of the outward, and that when they wept it was in the bitterness of gall, and not the overflowing of it for a season only."

Which doctrine was confirmed by her husband,

band, who, with now and then a deep sigh, added, "that the sackbutt, psalter, and timbrel, were instruments to make spiritual melody in the heart, but that the voice of a Syren was the eccho of destruction; that he had read among some of the pious commentators on the Old Testament, that it was by a song that Dalilah discovered wherein lay the strength of the strongest man; and, behold, his recompence of reward was according thereto; and, verily, though it is prophanelly said, that the stones followed the musick of one Orpheus, who doubtless was an heathen and a publican, as no mention has been made of him in holy text; and therefore surely it would be more christian-like to believe, that they were thrown at him, as a disturber of the peace and spiritual contemplation of his good neighbours."

The widow bore all these spiritual reprimands tolerably well, till she asked the meaning of the words Syren and Orpheus; but upon a full explanation of them by the dancing-master, who had had a university education, she distinguished herself delightfully well, telling the female quaker, "That the primitiveness of her dress was a lure to incontinency, the demureness of her countenance like a still water, but deeper than the bottomless pit, that her round coif was a ball of dissimulation, and the groanings, whinings and hickups of her and her Obadiah were like the belchings of a drone of a bagpipe; and no wonder that they were such enemies to musick,

sick, when not a soul in their whole congregation could sing better than Balaam's ass, though all the world knew, that musick was the voice of love, and singing a sure indication of an innocent and chearful heart; and that though she had not pored over the Old Testament like her old oaf, she had joined in chorus to many a stanza in Sternhold and Hopkins, and to the immortal memory of him that wrote it; she would sing Over the hills and far away, when she and her husband were as rotten as Tobit's dog; and gave them a little catch, which neither the quaker nor his wife thought fit to find fault with.

The mantua-maker, who, together with the widow had tossed off the best part of two bottles of wine at dinner, and whose acquaintance began at Bristol, by her clapping on the advertisement of "a widow to be let," on Mrs. Gorman's back, she was her advocate to the last degree, telling the quaker's wife, "that her shame-faced hypocrisy was a destruction to trade, and all honest tradesfolk, such as herself. Set you up indeed, with your primitive fashions, with your handkerchief pinned up as if you had a cancer in your breast, and your hair trussed under your cap, like a West-Indian money diver; marry in troth, one's husband must not die, but one must blubber and howl till one has lost one's eyesight; Mrs. Tabitha, if that be your name, and you are of that heathenish opinion, shew your love, do, shew your love, as soon as your husband pops off, by being burned alive

live on his funeral pile; the widow gentleman, many thanks to her ladyship, considers that trade ought to be encouraged, and mine among the rest, the mantua-making trade, the first of all others; though I suppose you are for the old dress, a fig-leaf, a single fig-leaf; foh! I am ashamed of you, and the figure you make."

The dancing-master who was a very little man, and upon that account there was room for one more than was usual in the coach, at every song of the widow's kept time with his feet, but having an hare-lip, was put in the position of one who was to grin for a wager, occasioned by the contraction of his face by laughing at the disputants; and when he attempted to shew his rhetorick in defence of singing and dancing, was obliged to clap his hand to his mouth to keep it shut, being aware of what an odd figure he made when it was preternaturally extended; and was at last almost suffocated by the ill-favoured gap in his mouth: by which the widow lost an advocate of great abilities and judgment.

The Greenwich-hospitaler being lame of the gout, and not a little disconcerted by the jumbling of the coach, a vehicle in the exercise of which he had little or no experience, sat very peaceable and unconcerned, otherwise than smiling at every thing the widow sung or said; and had discovered himself to have been a boatswain of a man of war, and kept a publick-house at Greenwich: however neither his good temper nor taciturnity continued

nued long, for by a sudden jolt of the coach, the dancing-master's head was flung in his face, and his foot set on the man of war's lame toes, who through the violence of the pain, and natural choler incident to men of his profession, gave the dancing-master a blow in the face, which occasioned some little effusion of blood, and the dancing-master endeavouring to conceal his dishonour with his handkerchief, they did not see his hare-lip any more that day; but could now and then discover a nod of special denunciation and resentment; which the boatswain understood very well by telling him, That if the head of his fly-boat was not kept a little steadier, he would belay him in the stern.

Before they had left Bristol the boatswain had communicated to our hero the secret of his having a great liking to the widow, which very probably arose from some account he had received from captain Dowding of her circumstances (the captain and he being old acquaintances) and probably the captain had been good-natured enough to expatiate on her person, virtue, and good-humour, and all the other qualifications in the marriage-state, of late so consequentially inserted in every newspaper, in which mention is made of that honourable condition; but be that as it will, the boatswain in a very discreet manner, when the rest of their fellow-travellers were in bed, took the opportunity of discovering his mind to our hero, at the expence of many a comfortable bowl of punch, at the peril of the plaintiff;
and

and so true was our hero to the trust reposed in him, that not a love-sick tale of the boatswain's, nor one syllable of his honourable intentions, but were conveyed to the widow by his means. In answer to which she said, "the man is lame, quite lame, though possibly he may be a careful pains-taking man, and if it should be our luck to come together, 'tis that which is the main thing to be regarded by me now; however, if he opens his mind to me on the occasion, I will take care to give him a proper answer; and lord, fellow-traveller, if this should be a match, will it not shew you, what strange things happen in this world? that you that have been a witness to my losing one man very unfortunately, and have been acquainted as I may say, with my being ravished from another, may now probably be an instrument in getting me a third; concluding, however, that the honest gentleman was lame; aye, lame enough, poor man, indeed!"

This declaration, except as to the boatswain's loss of his limbs, appeared very promising to our hero's negotiations, and accordingly he furnished his employer with the conversation and debates then on foot between him and the widow, mentioning her observations on his lameness very tenderly at first, till at length urging it, as the only bar that lay in his way, and a matter that ought to be cleared up; the boatswain told him, "that it was a sort of a distemper that came athwart him but now and then, but ever since he had
resolved

resolved to board the widow as soon as he could, that his nerves and sinews which were at sometimes a little slack and unbent, were now as tort and well braced as the yard-arms of the main-sail, and it must be hard of weather indeed, when he could not carry top and top-gallant-sail, in case he was to leeward of such a prize as the widow ;” and at the same time fell to capering and dancing beyond measure, insomuch that our hero was in dread of a dislocation, and so desirous of keeping him from the consequences of a fall, that he promised him to satisfy the widow of his extraordinary abilities ; and by his former proficiency and experience in physick cleared up the terrible articles of insanity and insufficiency so flily charged on him by the widow ; and thereupon the match was concluded at all events, by and between the parties and their agents before they got to London ; and the honest, lame, quite lame tar, was married within a fortnight afterwards to his virtuous, beautiful, rich, charitable, prudent, sensible, discreet, good-natured, affable, pious, tender and affectionate mistress ; and settled at Greenwich at the sign of ——— where our hero frequently paid them a visit, and however badly he began his travels it is hoped that some of the female world will allow that he ended them honourably, by his assistance and friendship to one of their sex who was in distress for an husband.

As soon as our hero got to London, he went to the house where his father dwelt when he left

left it, and there found both him and his mother living, but at the first view was no more known to either of them, than if he had not been their son; his countenance being quite changed by the heat of the country, and by his dress a complete foreigner; but upon their recollecting him, he was received with the utmost tenderness, and with tears fully expressive of the most compassionate affection; tears that determined him in the strongest resolutions, not only of a filial obedience in general, but doubly so in gratitude for the indulgent goodness they had shewn him, in his deliverance from the wretched condition his former misbehaviour had been too much the occasion of.

He had not been long at home, before he found, that his father's circumstances were quite the reverse of what they were when he left him, occasioned, among other misfortunes, by a tedious law-suit, in which he was defeated, and his estate mortgaged to one of the masters in chancery to the full value of it; with three other children at home unprovided for, all depending on a pension from the crown of two hundred pounds a year; so that seeing them in that condition, and instead of being able by any means to assist them, that he must be an incumbrance, he determined to go abroad again, fully resolved to keep clear of the Spanish coast; and accordingly fixed on Lisbon, having hopes of some favour from Mr. Burnet, then consul there, and late one of his majesty's judges in England, with whom his eldest brother

brother and he had a great intimacy at the Temple ; and to whom he was likewise known at Lisbon : if he did not succeed with him, he was determined to try his fortune at Jamaica, or indeed any where else, rather than be an eye-witness to the distresses of a father and family which he could not relieve. Before he had taken this resolution, his father introduced him to lord Carteret, to return him thanks for his goodness in procuring his discharge and liberty ; when he was so kind as to promise he would do him what further services lay in his power ; and if he had been so fortunate as to have had an opportunity by some proper hands of applying to him when lord-lieutenant of Ireland, he has no reason to doubt but he should have experienced it.

He stayed at home about two months, at the expiration of which he took his farewell, truly melancholy, of his father and relations ; much more so on account of their circumstances, than his being again set a-drift to find anchorage where fortune might direct him ; both which were the unhappy condition in which he was to set sail again : and considering what a forlorn way his father's death must leave the rest of his family in, he wished from his heart that instead of returning home it might have been his lot to have gone elsewhere ; and under the deepest impressions of grief that could arise from such a scene, in 1723 he went on board the Mary galley bound for Lisbon, and from thence to Jamaica, and carried letters of
recom-

recommendation with him to Mr. Burnet, and others to Mr. Dodwell at Jamaica, who was his father's intimate friend; and as he did not know to which of those places he might have occasion to resort, they were equally indifferent to the bearer. The ship was first to put in at Liverpool, and there take in some part of her freight; which was accordingly done, and after she had compleated her lading, they set sail, and at night met with a violent storm, in which she lost her fore and mizen-masts, and was drove in sight of Wexford, and from thence into the bay of Dublin, where she came to an anchor, and being under a necessity of staying there to refit, our hero went sometimes ashore; a curiosity he always indulged himself in, whenever they lay any time in an harbour, and as he had heard so often and so many accounts of Dublin, he was particularly desirous of seeing it; and there accidentally but very fortunately heard of the noble lord mentioned in the preface to this history, and as he had the honour of being known to him in the earliest part of his life, he was encouraged on that footing to wait on him at his house, where he found a reception conformable to his lordship's great character, particularly that part of it, his extensive humanity and benevolence; and by his assistance, countenance and recommendation to a gentleman in one of the highest stations in the law, who has shewn him the greatest instances of kindness, he is now at liberty to view the rocks and storms he has escaped, safe at anchor in an harbour, where he has

has the honour to be known to some of the best rank of life in it, and particularly to the judges; where he has received an universal kindness from the gentlemen of the bar, an experienced friendship from those of his own profession, and one continued favour from the rest of his acquaintance; where the good hand of providence, though in a storm, directed the helm to bring our hero safe to a country, where he has met with all the satisfaction and plenty he could desire; a continued round of kindness, without the embarrassment, to his knowledge, of one single enemy; and he earnestly hopes, that as long as this history shall put its readers in mind of the providential instances in it, it will perpetuate our hero's sense of gratitude to all such gentlemen as have honoured him with their friendship, kindness or acquaintance; which will be his utmost gratification, and who upon that account, hopes he shall be pardoned for venturing to lay himself liable to any censure for publishing so uncommon and variegated a life.

F I N I S.

Books printed for J. WHISTON and B. WHITE,
in Fleetstreet.

In Two neat Pocket Volumes, price 6s. bound,

I. **M**emoirs of Sir Charles Goodville and his
Family; in a Series of Letters to a
Friend.

II. Memoirs illustrating the Manners of the present
Age; wherein are contained the remarkable *In-
cidents* in the Life of a young Nobleman, by
M. Du Clos, Historiographer to the *French King*,
and Member of the Royal Academy at *Paris*.
In two neat Pocket Volumes, price 6s. bound.

III. The CHINESE SPY: Being a Series of Letters
between a *Chinese Traveller at Paris*, and his
Countrymen in *China, Muscovy, Persia and Japan*;
wherein the Government, Customs, Religion and
Learning of those several Nations are described
and compared with the *Europeans*. 2d Edition,
price 2s 6d. bound.

IV. The Works of Mons. DE LA BRUYERE; a
new Translation from the last *Paris Edition*: To
which is added, The Manner of Living with
great Men; written after the Manner of M.
De la Bruyere, by N. Rowe, Esq; 2 vol. 12mo.
Price 6s. bound.

V. Observations on the Greek and Roman Classics,
in a Series of Letters to a young Nobleman;
now published for the Use of Gentlemen at the
University, and those who may have Occasion
to speak in publick: To which are added, Re-
marks on the Italian Language and Writers.
In a Letter from Mr. *Joseph Baretti* to an English
Gentleman at *Turin*, written in the Year 1751.
Price 3s. neatly bound.



11

is
2

t
y
.

s
s
s